

# The Oldest History of the World

Discovered By  
OCCULT SCIENCE

In DETROIT, MICH.



Benny Evangelist

Edited and with an introduction by Jarett Kobek

Kobek.com Klassic  
2008



<http://www.kobek.com>

The text of *The Oldest History of the World* may be used, quoted, copied and distributed without the publisher's consent as is seen fit by rational people everywhere.

## *Lost, Lowdown, and Lonesome: An Introduction*

The year 1926 saw publication of the first substantial step in the career of a new author. This author went on to affect a profound change over the direction of American letters. He was one of those rare literary talents around whom we may divide all writers into two: before and after.

As it happens, that wasn't this book. It was *The Sun Also Rises*. Written by Ernest Hemingway.

The tendency when tracing the history of literature, or indeed, any art form, is to construct a linear narrative that flows, sequentially, from point to point. We find it more reassuring, and easier, to demonstrate the influence of one generation on the next in a long list of connections that inevitably concludes with the present.

Unfortunately, the histories of literature and art are neither coherent nor linear. Art doesn't progress. It mutates.

We no longer marvel at the new style Hemingway, in part, brought to bear. Time has transformed him into the normative from which all mutation must proceed. The old man was successful. Other men, other mutants, were not.

*The Oldest History of the World* is a work so obscure that to call it forgotten would be an abuse of terms. Forgotten things must first be known. Remembered. The work at hand had no such luck. Self-published in 1926 by its author, Benny Evangelist, it has remained nearly unread for the past seventy-five years.

The title is literal. The author has rewritten Genesis from a period slightly before creation up until a thousand or so years before the flood of Noah. The only recognizable characters are Adam, Eve, Cain, Abel, and God. The rest are pure inspiration.

Outside of a degrading inclusion as a plot device in a nearly unreadable novel by Colin Wilson, it has known no literary recognition. No one has found meaning within its pages. No one has found inspiration. No one has found a style influencing enough to warrant imitation.

The year 1885. In Naples, Italy, Benny Evangelist is born into the world as Benjamino Evangelista. Nothing is known of his early life. At the age of seventeen he emigrates to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He joins an older brother named Antonio.

According to Evangelist's own writing and Antonio's account, Evangelist begins in Philadelphia to experience religious trances. The nature of these trances are unknown. They occur in the early hours of the day, and provide Evangelist with the impetus, the material, and the inspiration to write his great work.

Evangelist's religious views and practices grow increasingly unorthodox. His brother's disapproval deepens. Antonio disowns Benjamino in 1908. The two

men barely speak again for the rest of their lives.

After Philadelphia, Evangelist moves to York, Pennsylvania. He works on a rail road gang. York provides him with a rich harvest of folk religion. He witnesses the region's faith healers and hex magic. He observes and he absorbs.

1921 sees him settling in Detroit, Michigan. Evangelist establishes himself as a carpenter. He marries. The Evangelists have children. Benny outgrows his profession. He's soon established as a general building contractor and a relatively prosperous real estate owner. The money comes quick and fast.

Knowledge is nothing if not applied, and Evangelist demonstrates the lessons learned in York. He moonlights as a faith healer. Love potions and amulets. He's known throughout the area as a man to see when healing is needed. He casts astrological charts. He speaks prophecy. He charges up to ten dollars per session.

In 1926, Evangelist contracts a printer to publish the first volume of what he intended to be a four volume work. He had spent twenty years of his life writing it. It's the only volume he ever managed to complete. It's what you now hold in your hands.

On July 3rd, 1929, a man named Vincent Elias came to Evangelist's house. He was there to talk real estate. He carried the deeds to a farm Evangelist had purchased the previous Monday. It was 10:30 AM. He knocked on the door. No one answered. The house was unlocked. Elias stepped inside. He walked down the hall. He came to Evangelist's office. He looked inside. Elias saw Evangelist

slumped down in a chair.

Evangelist's head lay on the floor.

It had been completely severed. Elias fled the house and summoned the police.

The office was a tiny dark room with a single window. When the police arrived, they found aside Evangelist's head three large photographs of a child in a coffin. Scores upon scores of copies of *The Oldest History of the World* littered the office.

Making their way to the house's upper level, the police entered one of the bedrooms. There they discovered Evangelist's wife, Santina, hanging over one side of the bed. Sinew alone kept the head connected. One of her arms had suffered massive damage but, like her head, remained attached. In her other arm rested the corpse of one of the Evangelist children. He had been an eighteen month old boy named Mario.

The police moved into another room and saw three more bodies. They were all children. Two lay in a pair of twin beds, while the third was on the floor. All had been butchered and hacked. Their ages ranged from four to seven.

In the basement, near a stash of alcohol, a shrine was found. Suspended above, hanging from a tangled mass of wires were large, grotesque puppets, each representing one of the celestial commanders that Evangelist details in *The Oldest History*. In the center of the figures was a large, electrically luminated eye. Members of the local precinct reported that Evangelist had asked permission to exhibit a religious demonstration of his puppets to the general public but had been denied. All the same, investigators found a sign in a basement window that read: "Great Celestial Planet

Exhibition.”

The whole family had been wiped out. The case was never solved. The police work was spectacularly bad. It took nearly a week for anyone in authority to realize that one of the Evangelist children, first identified as Margaret, had in fact been a boy named Matthew. Anyone *solving* the case was out of the question. Early on, the police latched onto a specific theory; Evangelist was a cult leader, and someone associated with this cult, perhaps a disgruntled ex-member, or perhaps the leader of a rival cult, had committed these murders. Despite the setback of no evidence supporting this theory — no cult members ever being found — the police ran with it long enough to evaporate the chances of finding the killer or killers.

Too many details and too little information.

Unfortunately, the only sources on Evangelist’s life are early Twentieth Century newspapers. Their finest hour was not the Evangelist case. Wrapped up in the fantastic elements of a fantastic case, the reporters of the day spent much of their time involved in groundless speculation. While the Detroit News editorial of July 4<sup>th</sup> speculating Evangelist’s religious practices brought his murder on himself is egregious, the worst abuse comes from the Detroit Free Press, July 5<sup>th</sup>, 1929. On page 4, a full half column entitled “Solution of Killings Is Seen in the Stars” contains a Detroit astrologer’s completely baseless speculation.

While these cultural artifacts may allow for a great deal of amusement contrasted against the conventions of our own more enlightened and less superstitious era, they certainly don’t help in unraveling the enigma of Benny Evangelist.

Just who in the hell *was* this guy and how did he get so weird?

We don't know who he was, but we know what he did, and we can hopefully find some revelation in his actions. When the police searched Evangelist's desk, they found two types of business cards. One dealt with his contracting business. The other read,

“Mr. Benny Evangelist, divine profetil, author and private history writer.”

Some incidents: Evangelist was often found on the street staring at the sky, mumbling to himself. He told his medical doctor, who considered Evangelist insane, of his plans to finance a film version of *The Oldest History of The World*. He believed it would transform Detroit's St. Aubin's Avenue into a second Hollywood. Of *The Oldest History of the World* itself, he believed that God had specifically contacted him to write His truest possible history. He went so far in his faith healing as to actually get *licensed* by the state of Michigan to practice medicine. The only stipulation of his license was that he not administer drugs or prescribe medicine.

These anecdotes don't come close to making a picture of the man. They're shadows from which we deduce a vague sense of shape. While Evangelist must have obviously been bizarre, he was also a man capable of moving from a simple carpenter to one of his community's more respected members. His religious mania, so touted in the press, never seemed to intrude on his countless business dealings.

An examination of *The Oldest History* helps answer our

questions. The work of Carlo Ginzburg has demonstrated that religion is a syncretic absorption of narrative framework interpreted over raw experience. The encountering of external narratives transforms the internal interpretation, and, if documented, allows us to trace back to the original ideas.

Evangelist must have spent some time acquainting himself with the going out of vogue 19<sup>th</sup> Century trends of Theosophism and Spiritualism. We need look no further than the phrase “Occult Science” for our evidence. Not necessarily evident in the work itself is the influence of the Germanic and Dutch folk religion of York. Yet, we know that Evangelist played the role of faith healer, and played it almost exactly as he’d seen it in York. Catholicism leaves heavy traces but that comes as no surprise. Evangelist went to church every Sunday and had all his children baptized. References in the work to “transeletism” and “magnetism” have no known sources but presumably point to other types of folk religion.

Perhaps more interesting than the narrative traces of religion are the echoes of day-to-day early 20<sup>th</sup> century life. For Evangelist did not simply appropriate religious trends, but also the language endemic to his period. The funniest, and oddest, moment in the entire work is the converging of two Antediluvian armies come to clash in battle. Knowing that the members of these warring factions are living in stone aged tribes, we are amazed to read Evangelist describe them as “troops” in “trenches”.

Lying beneath all this is the simple, almost pathetic, image of a man trying to express a religious and artistic aesthetic with the only tools available. Evangelist adopted and used the popular ideas and language around him because he had

nothing else. He lacked the education or formal religious training to become a skilled writer or theologian, but this is not to say that he was *untalented*. In a different life, one with money and easy opportunity, it's not hard to imagine the man achieving something truly great — and accessible.

Finally, we might ask, why even bother reading Evangelist? Why bother bringing him back into print?

Most people who attempt to read this book will fail. This reflects nothing on them. The text is difficult, confusing, and sometimes illiterate. There are valid reasons behind its historical obscurity.

For all the bad, there's an enormous amount of good. There are moments of shocking clarity and outrageous beauty. A Poetry of Misuse. Word juxtapositions that would never occur in the writing of a person even minimally trained in the language appear nearly every sentence, and they're *strong*. They point to a direction English never took. And never should.

*The Oldest History of the World* is outsider art. There's a whole world of writing that's hardly been seen and never been examined. Most of it is gut-wrenchingly awful. Practicality demands it be ignored. Do practical demands dictate literature?

What is *The Oldest History* outside? The earlier reference to Hemingway was not in passing. That both *The Oldest History* and *The Sun Also Rises* saw release in the same year is an empty coincidence. The contrast between the two books, and their respective authors, is pregnant with meaning.

With nearly eighty years of hindsight, Hemingway can be read pointing forward towards modernity. Here is the modern era. Slick, fast, condensed. Square deals and an end

to all the nonsense.

With Evangelist? Nothing so banal as backwards. More like a sidelong glance into all the weirdness that makes up the basic fabric of the American experience — immigrants, murder, and freak show piety. American history is a long sequence of bizarre events systematically whitewashed into a boring purity. Not by any controlling apparatus, nor by any specific people, but by a basic crisis of self.

Works like *The Oldest History* rip the mask off.

Jarett Kobek  
September 2001  
Boston, MA

## *Note on the Text*

I have attempted to preserve the 1926 text as much as possible. No alteration has been made to Evangelist's word choice, even when readability would dictate the severest editing. The original edition of the text, printed by a vanity press, contains many glaring and obvious typographical errors. These have been fixed when necessary. Errors of grammar and spelling, deduced from contextual use to be Evangelist's own, have not been changed.

Character names present an interesting issue, as several abruptly switch into mild deviations and then back again. These changes are always slight. King Pata becomes King Pate. Dave becomes Davete and goes back to being Dave. Only when such changes seem the result of a deliberate effort on Evangelist's part — occurring at least more than twice in the text — I have not normalized character identification.

The only editorial choice provoking any discomfort is, hopefully, one of mere aesthetics. The second half of the original is randomly interrupted by inexplicable ellipses, serving no discernable form or function. While we can not say whether Evangelist himself intended them to be present in the text, I have assumed them to be printer's errors and removed them all.

To my best knowledge, there are three extant copies of the

original of *The Oldest History of the World*. The present edition was painstakingly typed from the volume available in the research collection of the New York Public Library; this occurred across a two week period in September 2001, interrupted only by the terroristic attacks on the World Trade Centre. This copy entered the collection of the NYPL in March 1927, before Evangelist was murdered. I presume the man himself sent the volume.

[In November 2001, I put *The Oldest History of the World* back into print. Though a noble enterprise, that edition was marred by youthful ineptitude and ignorance of certain basic decencies. In short: the typesetting was a disaster. The design was nonexistent. The current digital volume, published in 2008, is intended to replace and supplant the earlier version.]

*The Oldest*  
**History of the World**

---

*Discovered By*

**OCCULT SCIENCE**

*In* **DETROIT, MICH.**



**World Private Book**

---

**BENNY EVANGELIST**

*Author*

**3587 St. Aubin Ave.    :-    DETROIT, MICH.**

**Phone Melrose 1771 W**

?- 5421. Years story ?





## OUR STORY BEGINS WITH THE EPOCH BEFORE GOD TO THE PROPHET NOAH

The first volume of history extends 4305 years before our first father, Adam, to 1116 years after the birth of Adam.

The second volume begins from 1116 to 3909 years after Adam, or to the flood in Noah's time.

The third volume begins from the time of the flood to King Solomon, or 2450 years after the flood.

The fourth volume will begin 2450 up to the New Testament, or 5995 years after the flood.





## *PREFACE*

My story is from my own views and signs, that I see from 12 to 3 A.M.

I began on February 2, 1906 in Philadelphia, Penn., and it was completed on February 2, 1926, in the city of Detroit, County of Wayne, State of Michigan.

On this new earth the last one was created by God the Father Celestial and the great prophet Miel. We call it today the great Union Federation of America. I am with the power of God and I respect this Nation.

In this book I shall express all my views of past twenty years. In this great continent are all the generations.

By the willingness of God, my respect to this nation, I shall do my best to tell you of the old world. I shall tell about the world before God was created up until this last generation, and I shall explain to you your descendants.

1. – Creation of God;
2. – Eternity;

3. – Creation of the Celestial World;
4. – Creation of Light;
5. – Creation of the Earth;
6. – Creation of the Sun;
7. – Creation of Eldom;
8. – Creation of the Moon and seven Celestial Commanders and how they united to rule the Earth.
9. – Creation of all Animals;
10. – Creation of Adam;
11. – Creation of Eve.
12. – The generations of Adam and Eve and their descendants;
13. – How and when all the generations began, from Adam to Noah.
14. – All the Celestial signs and earth phenomena and changes of peoples and laws.

## THE SECOND WORLD

After the flood, began the second world.

1. – Noah replaced all the people that were saved from the flood;
2. – Laws of the Second World;
3. – All the disaster happening to the people from Noah's time until the New Testament;
4. – The building of the Tower of Babylon, the separation of five generations;
5. – King Solomon and his laws:

6. – Novita, the first astronomer, and first author of astronomy and the Bible;
7. – Something about the Astronomers and Prophets;
- 8.
9. – Creation of South America;
10. – Creation of Attirante (Asia Minor);
11. – Creation of Northern (North America);
- 12.
13. – Alessandro Magno and his power;
14. – The first people that sailed to three new lands, when and where they came from;
15. – Foundation of cities in the Second World, and the reincarnation of the people.

## THE THIRD WORLD

After the reincarnation of the Song of God that we call Jesus Christ, begins the Third World; how we are today, in the year 1926.

If I live, I shall tell of the Third World; if not, the story closes at the Quates of Rome.

**BENNY EVANGELIST.**

## CHAPTER I.

Before the creation of God there existed nothing but air and water.

Today we find land, men, animals, etc.

Between the air and water there were the seven winds.

At that time there also lived fish and serpents.

When the winds united a tempest always arose, and they never agreed so finally decided to choose a leader who would take command of everything.

After this decision was made they formed a large coach of clouds with the strength of the air and wind, which they closed well.

After ninety days they opened this coach and in it found a phenomenon the aspect of a human being. It had arms, no legs, two large wings on the arms and one on its back, a blond beard, and it was seven times the size of a normal man. The phenomena was so strong and bright he gave to the air and wind, a surprise and gave him a great enthusiasm and was pleased to have their first child.

The winds named him God and gave their strength and he began to fly and with the help of the air his strength multiplied until it was thirty-nine times stronger than all the winds together. He had

velocity like the mind of an astrologer. His life consisted in running and taking force from the air.

God obliged the air and the winds to come into his Dominion and became lord of everything; air and wind.

Owing to the fact that he was formed in ninety days he called every ninety days a “stazio”, like today we have the four seasons which we call a year.

For only eight thousand seasons, which is two thousand years God lived as phenomenon in the air, a child of the winds and from continued running became so furious that the winds and air trembled with fear.

In order that God would not be angry, the air composed another phenomenon with the wind’s help. This phenomenon was similar to God but did not have physical strength, although it possessed an intellectual mind.

One day when God was very angry with the wind, in the last stage of his wrath there appeared this little phenomenon and said to him:

“Calm yourself. You can do much more if you are peaceful than if you let your wrath get the best of you.”

God was surprised to meet the little phenomena and he said: “I wish you to stay with me forever to calm me when I get angry and brutal.”

God asked him who he was and what he wished.

“I am your consolation and have come to calm your anger, which harms you. And the winds and air, whom you terrify think that you are their child and that they have given you the strength that you have. It is your duty to be calm and peaceful and respect those who have created you.”

God responded: “I am calm and I want you to follow me for my love for you will do everything you like. I will put myself at your command will do nothing without your

consent.”

The phenomena answered: “Your strength and my will can do everything, but I cannot run with you because I lack the physical strength. My only strength is in my will and I can only calm and comfort you.”

God said: “I want you to follow me and comfort me in the moments of my wrath. I will give you strength to do this if you will turn in the direction of my heart, take my hand and you will have the power to always be with me.”

The little phenomena was sure what God said.

“I will comfort you forever. Will you promise to obey me?” asked the phenomena.

God responded: “I promise that I will never disobey you and will always do everything you desire, I swear to you for my power and aerial strength.”

With this word of God the phenomena took his left arm and had received the strength to fly.

God then gave the phenomena the strength to go with him and see the world and the difference between the winds and the air from up in the sky.

He named his little comfort Eternity and said to her: “We are both strong, I will my physical strength and you with your will power. Will must be alike and I will do everything to please you.”

Eternity then asked to be protected from the winds and God promised her that he would no longer be disturbed by them, so he built a large wall the size of a mountain.

He united many columns of air which is the same proportion as the mountain today.

He also made a pavilion for his heavenly reign in such a manner that the winds remained underneath the pavilion.

The length of five thousand and one “stazios” or seasons,

which is today one thousand three hundred years, composed his celestial reign, according to the wishes of his comforter.

The wind remained alone without their commandant, their begin to go around in the air and tried to recontrol by theirselves.

The seven winds were then able to go from the heavens to the sea without in any manner disturbing God and Eternity.

After one thousand three hundred years when they had completed their work they descended down to see the winds and get a report of what they had been doing, because God had not seen them all these years.

When the winds saw their master they all gathered around him.

God began to question them as to their behaving and welfare during these five thousand and one stazio. And said: "I did all the celestial throne without you."

The winds said to God: "We have descended so much that we finally found a great expansion of water similar to the pavilion which you created. This water contained many phenomena, and we have but two and they have been separated from us."

God was very much surprised to find that the winds had discovered this water.

Eternity said: "We will go and see these things that are reported by the winds."

God responded in favor of this and they then returned to their kingdom very much pleased to have heard of the discovery that the winds had made.

When God returned to his celestial throne he was anxious for the discovery of the wind with a furious opinion in his mind.

Eternity asked God what he had done during the period of

two thousand years of his reign in the air.

To this God responded: "I did nothing but get angry and furious with air and winds. Time seemed very long and tedious. Now we have been united for one thousand three hundred years without and any quarrels or anger, and my strength has doubled with your comfort and help I am able to anything."

Eternity said: "You cannot live without my comfort, because of your love for me you have done so much, but with your strength only you have done nothing. Therefore we will visit the world of water. In order to learn we must see. Those who do not observe will never do anything. We must go and see this great expansion of water. Follow me and we will go," said God.

They began to descend in the air until they arrived on top of this world of water. Land did not exist.

Around the water and air was darkness.

As God and Eternity were observing the water they saw many fish of different sizes and shapes.

— The water is more powerful than my kingdom. It contains many phenomena, while the air has only two.

— I must multiply the number of phenomena in my heaven and make it more powerful than the water.

God and Eternity then returned to their kingdom, but God was very troubled. He was thinking of the many possessions of the water and that the heavens had but two.

God tried to create more celestial phenomena but it was impossible, He tried in the air to create other phenomena, unite many clouds, made coaches, but all turn in the wind.

Eternity comforted him and told him that it was the wishes of Nature.

You can try to create phenomena, but it is difficult to say

that you will succeed. Your strength is powerful, but is it not your nature to make such a large quantity of phenomena? You must try to make them of your own resemblance and countenance, and you must also agree with the waters.

He believed that he had enough strength to create his own phenomena, but in vain. He worked with all might for about two thousand six hundred and fifty years but did not succeed and was very much discouraged.

Eternity consoled him by saying: "Do not do things that are against your nature, because they can never be done well. Everything must be as nature would have it. Let us return to the water and again look at the phenomena and then we will see if we can be moved successfully."

When God again saw the fish, which he called phenomena, he said: "I must make them a gift, this gift will be daylight. With light they will see us better and we can be more friendly with them."

Eternity was very much pleased with this and begged God to give them light.

Then God cried: "By my strength and by the will of my comfort let here be light to brighten the road of these phenomena of the water, so that they may be able to see me and I can distinguish them."

Therefore came the daylight. There were twelve hours of light and twelve hours of darkness.

The "stazio" was now ninety-one days instead of ninety.

"There are now three of us," said God, "we two and daylight. We will increase each 'stazio' half. One-half belongs to lights which is a 'stazio' of ninety days. His first work making ninety-one, and with Eternity makes ninety-two. One-half being taken away for the light leaving ninety-one and a half, one quarter for the passage leaves ninety-one

and one-quarter. Ninety-one days, and six hours, composed a 'stazio' or season."

The four stazio, one anebus, now we say four seasons, one year.

After God has created daylight, the light said to the phenomena: "The fish were escaping under the water."

God believed that they were trying to flee his presence. At this he became very angry and said: "After I have given them light they try to escape. They can hide from my presence, but I will destroy them with my celestial tempest and wind."

Eternity trying to calm him remarked: "Do not harm the fish as they are causing you no disturbance. There are but two of us and large number of them and they can protect themselves. You can destroy anything with your power," said Eternity, "but of what harm are the fish to you. You must let them alone, as it is only natural that they should do this."

God looked at the air and then at the water and said: "I will make land and separate the water and land. Land shall be higher than water."

The land will be a great thing and we are going to have the privilege to own the earth in the level of the water.

Eternity knew that land would be a very good thing, but God only wanted to create land in order to be a disturbance to the fish, and not to satisfy Eternity's desire. God then raised his right hand and said: "For my power and strength and willing of my comfort I wanted the land above the water."

Therefore there arose great mountains and plains.

God was very joyous over his wonderful creation and returned to his kingdom with Eternity. They remained there for three hundred years. During that time God tired to

create more aerial phenomena, He began to travel all over his aerial globe and united many clouds in form of coaches and said to his comforter: "Sometime we will get results from this work."

After three hundred years, they returned to visit the land. They found a great mass of ice which resembled a crystal, but God said that he will be able to than all the ice which was covering the land.

Eternity was in favor of this and begged God to have heat and relieve the land of all the ice.

God said to his comforter: "I expect to have something of my work in the aerial coach, all that I have united in my pastime."

God looked at the water and then looked at the air, raised his right hand, looked at the heavens and cried: "For the pity of the land, for the wish of my comfort, Eternity, for 'Eloms' of my strength, let there be heat to free the land from all the ice."

There appeared a great light which then became a head like an opal. The face and nose like a woman's, and a long mouth that with its rays it threw a great deal of heat in all directions.

"Here I am, in your power and to obey your commands. My name is Sun, I came from your aerial coach."

God then ordered the Sun to free the earth from the ice and never to abandon it. God and Eternity then departed for their kingdom.

The sun then remained all alone to melt the ice, which he did in three months.

The sun's heat became doubly strong in order to sooner liberate the earth.

Eternity was so anxious to see what the sun was doing above the land that she prayed to God to take her down to

see.

God and Eternity did not return to visit the earth for three years, and after these three years they went to see what the Sun had accomplished.

They found the earth filled with grass and flowers which were beginning to bloom.

God said to Eternity: "Notice the wonderful ability that the earth has when united to the Sun. They produce greater things than heaven, and — it has the power, but heaven can help the earth to make the plants and flowers grow."

While God was looking at the flowers, grass, and bushes, he noticed a small weed in among the grass and he said to Eternity: "See this little weed? It looks so weak and unhappy. If it had the proper care and support it would become a beautiful thing."

Eternity told God to give the little weed some support.

God said to his comforter: "I promise to do all for your sake."

God then raised his hand and looked at the heavens, cried: "For the love of the little plant, the wish of my comforter, let there come a gardener to cultivate this little weed."

There then appeared a tall, thin man with large muscles. He said: "My name is Eldom. I am at your command will do everything you desire. I am from your aerial coach and have the ability to stay in your land go to your aerial club."

God showed him the plant and said: "Take care of this little weed. It is colorless and lifeless. Remove all the bushes around it so that it can alone receive all the strength of the soil."

He withdrew for a little and said: "I will do other things for the benefit of the earth," and with his raised his right hand saying: "For the good of the earth, and Eternity, will let there

be a transmission of light.”

There appeared an enormous head with two large eyes and said: “I am the Moon and am at your command. Lunerio with me we are from your aerial coach, we are willing to be your servants and do all the earth for your sake, I will give light with one of my eyes for fourteen days and one-quarter and then with the other eye for fourteen days and one-quarter. Every twenty-eight and a half days I will illuminate the earth with both eyes.”

God said: “You attend my command,” he said to his comfort, “My power will create more phenomena for your sake and the benefit of the land.”

God then again withdrew and cried: “Let there come a ruler who will rule all my servants.”

There arrived a very large man of a very nice appearance saying: “You are our Father, our own Master, I am from your celestial coach, my name is Domins, I am commanded to judge all the other planets by you, who is our Father and Mother.”

When God heard this he was very happy and said: “You are a good judge to name me your father and to say that I was created before everything else. I will put others under your control.”

The ruler of the planets then stood by the side of God and said: “We must have a servant with name of Mars, It will be strong and severe, who will see that everything I command is done and who will punish or reward the other planets accordingly.”

God obeyed this ruler who was very learned and wise, and raised his hand and cried: “Let there come Mars, who will defend what the ruler command.”

There then appeared a short, robust man saying: “Here I

stand to your command with all my strength to defend the just, and to punish those that neglect their duties.”

Meanwhile it was daybreak and the Sun entered with its rays of heat, and God said to him: “I did not think that you had the power to do all you have done. With your heat the earth has produced many things that do not exist in heaven.”

The earth is more powerful in this way than the heavens.

God then told the six planets to obey his command and that he was returning to his kingdom. He said that only the Sun could proceed according to his wishes, but the rest had to obey him on his return.

Then he returned with Eternity to see if anything new had happened in his kingdom. But found it as they had left it.

God continually thought of the strength of the earth to be able to produce so many things with the sun’s heat.

The next night God and Eternity descended again to the earth and found the five planets attending to God’s orders.

When he appeared in the air he said: “Here is your God and it pleases me to see you obeying my commands.”

The Moon, who had seen the great rays of the Sun wanted a protection in order not to be injured when passing under the rays.

God said: “Transmission, transmission, I will create your protection. God then raised his hand and said: “Let there come a protection for the Moon!”

There appeared a phenomenon with wings of clouds and said: “Here I am with my wings, one of which I will put from the Sun to the Moon and one from the Moon to the earth. The one from the Sun to the Moon will stop the heat of sun’s rays from injuring the Moon, and the one from the Moon to the earth will bring the temperature to the point that is necessary.”

God told him to obey his commands and said: “We must have a courier to refer everything to me and to the planets.”

He raised his hand saying: “Let there come a messenger to report me to the behaving of the planets.”

There appeared a small man, very energetic. He said: “I am here to serve you, my name is Jove, I am from your aerial coach.”

God then withdrew and cried: “Let there come a Venus to server my comforter.”

There appeared a woman of masculine type and said: “I am ready to serve your comforter, my name is Vener — Venus.”

God said: “Obey my commands, and again withdrawing and raising his hand cried: “Let there come Saturn to keep all the secrets of these planets.”

A small man appeared saying: “I want to obey you and I will take all the reports and keep them all in sacred rule.”

When the day was at an end, The Sun was leaving and God stopped him saying: “All of the ten planets will listen to and obey my commands. I am your God and Master, and your father. You have no other father or master. You are all my children. The Sun was the first to give heat to the earth, because the earth was created by me. I will now make him travel from the sky to the earth, and every two seasons will turn back. He will go ahead for two seasons and return two seasons. Therefore he will walk ahead six months and back six months.

“Eldom, the second master, will command the earth. You can cultivate the life of the plants, whose fruit will be your health. You can put anything that you wish on the earth.

“Moon, the third of my creations, will transmit light to the earth. You will travel between the Sun, the Earth, and you will have ‘Lunerio’ for your assistance and need.

“Lunerio,’ brought by the Moon, you will respond to all the wishes of the Moon, and will report everything from the other planets to the Moon. If you disobey the Moon you are disobeying me.

“Mercury, with your wings of clouds, when it is necessary you will put one wing from the Sun to the Moon and one from the Moon to the earth, therefore hindering heat and light.

“Domins, more wise and learned, you will rule all the planets. You will represent me. Whatever you do will be accepted by me.

“Mars, you will obey ‘Domins’ as you would obey me. You will protect those whom he tells you to protect and punish those whom he tells you to punish.

“Jove, you will be the messenger to the plants and to my kingdom and will report everything between and judge ‘Domins’ and myself. You must be very wise and reserved.

“Veners, you will be a servant to Eternity. Obey her more than you would obey me. If you disobey your master I will punish you severely.

“Saturn you will learn all the secrets of the command planets and relate them to me.”

These are all the commanders of God and their duties.

God then dismissed them by saying: “The Sun will go ahead and the rest will follow him.”

The Sun asked to always have Domins near him who also asked to follow the Sun.

God responded; “I will do everything that Domins demands because it was he who has made me father and master. Domins you will follow the Sun. Lunerio will follow Domins. Mars will follow Lunerio. Mercury will follow Mars. Jove will follow Mercury. Vener will follow

Jove. Saturn will follow them all and will report all their secrets to me. I want all of you to agree, and every four seasons one will command everything, so that you will all be alike and have the same power and privilege and will rule the earth and everything that Eldom puts in your dominion.”

God returned to his kingdom with Eternity, who was very much pleased with what had been done.

God began to divide his strength. To each heavenly planet he gave thirty-nine degrees of his strength. One degree to the earth, and he remained with thirty-seven. The earth and planets were united with the force of God.

Of the thirty-nine degrees of God’s strength, the earth had one and one was divide among the ten planets in a manner in which they were all able to judge everything for themselves: land, water and air.

The circle which was made by the Sun remained as it was and the seven planets were as we find them today in astronomy, Domins, Lunerio, Mars, Mercury, Jove, Venus and Saturn.

The planets were called transmission as today we call the Moon!

Eldom was above the earth and was able to put anything on the earth and cultivate it.

Eldom with the ability of the revolution of Caiol on the west, north of Caiol sea, that was the high spot of the land. Eldom named the place Ape, he then began to culture the vines and tress and to create some of his phenomenon with the name of God, and willingly of his comforter.

God was in his kingdom awaiting the reports of the planets.

All the planets ruled the earth for a year which began the twenty-first of March.

The first was the Sun, followed by Domins.

The second was Domins, followed by Moon.

The third was the Moon, followed by Mars.

Fourth was Lunerio followed by Mercury.

Fifth was Mars, followed by Jove.

Sixth was Eldom, followed by Venus, and here arose the first disagreement between Eldom and Venus. They were soon calmed by Domins and the Sun.

The seventh Mercury went in Saturn place, but they had disagreements among themselves.

The eight was Jove followed by Domins. They were very peaceful.

Ninth was Venus followed by Lunerio. These two did not agree in any way.

Tenth was Saturn followed by Mars, who were always struggling with each other.

Mars overthrew Saturn.

Eldom assisted Mars. The Sun assisted Saturn, Domins was the peacemaker between Saturn and Mars.

This the first rule of the celestial command of God. Every ten years all had a turn of being in command for one year each, and now the sun starts again as the Sun was the first and then Saturn begins again, this was nineteen years and all had settle with the moon, because the moon was in the same grain to create. Every nineteen years the moon will be the same and every 39 years all the celestial commands will unite and report to Saturn and in turn Saturn will report to God in his kingdom.

This was the beginning of the commander of earth who are today the masters of the earth and the people.

From March 21<sup>st</sup> to March 20<sup>th</sup> of the following year, one was in charge of everything. Every two revolutions

they would meet and every four they would reunite in the kingdom of God.

God and Eternity had retired in their kingdom, leaving the planets to rule the earth.

For fifty-two years Eldom has been creating all sorts of animals. After this length of time he wanted to create a phenomenon of his aspect, but could never succeed. He was very angry that the animals would offer him no assistance.

In the fifty-second year he went to his heavenly father to have the strength to have an assistant, because the vines and weeds were growing and he was alone.

God said to Eldom: "You go to the Caiol sea at the edge of the water for my name and my comfort willingly call the generative fish every way he lay the milk you will give respiration and cover with the dust. After three days gather very carefully and uncover the milk with whatever you find to be of assistance to you."

According to these instructions he went to the foot of the Ape and cried: "By the strength of God let there come a generative fish to be my companion to generate my assistance and help to cultivate the vine."

As soon as Eldom had finished there appeared him a fish called dolphin, who left her milk on the banks of the water.

Then Eldom breathed three times on the dolphin milk and covered it with earth.

After three days Eldom went to see the result of his work.

The shore had become very large. Eldom, with his hand very careful, anxiously opens the spot where he had covered and in it found a small hairy creature. Its head was similar to the dolphin's and its body was somewhat like himself.

Eldom was very much pleased and carried this small creature to the vine gardens on the Ape land and covered the

child with dry leaves. Eldom prayed to the Sun to give the calory to his first child and help the leaves warm the child for name of God and his comfort willing.

The child grown very fast and Eldom named him Odom — Adam. Eldom wanted Adam to grow very fast so that he could accompany him. The generation of Adam was in September third, my story begins count one. After three days Eldom was so happy he went to the celestial God to tell him of the great news.

Eldom said to God, “Oh celestial Master, with your name your comfort gave willingly of the milk of the generative fish and with my breast we have created the first man and named him Adam.”

God said to Eldom, “Eldom, Eldom, I want you to take good care of the child because he is the first man that was generated with the calory on my land.”

Eldom promised God that he would not disobey his command and was willing to take care of Adam and the garden for name of God and Eternity willing. Eldom departed and returned to Ape where he had left Adam. When Eldom returns to the earth he found Adam walking and playing with the animals, he was glad to see his child walk and he gets Adam on his arm and plays with him and calls him my dearest comforter.

## CHAPTER II.

### ELDOM AND ADAM UNIT ON THE EARTH

Eldom, very happy to have an assistant to cultivate the vines, taught Adam how to do this and told him that the land belonged to God who was their father and master, that God created the earth and the ten planets and had given him the strength to put everything in existence on the earth. He told him that God had put the earth under his control.

Adam was greatly surprised when he saw all that existed on the earth.

He lived among all the animals and enjoyed himself playing with the beasts, because the beasts were not afraid of Adam nor of their creator Eldom.

Now that Eldom had an assistant to cultivate the vines, he flew around the air playing with heavenly things. When Adam saw this he also wanted to fly and go and see God, but could not succeed because he could not fly like Eldom. Adam tried every way to fly in the air, but it was in vain; he began to take notice of the birds to see how they were flying, and he prayed to all the winged creatures to let him have their wings so he could fly with his father Eldom. They were willing to do this for him, so Adam tries to pull out of

the feathers of their wings, and he was very careful not to hurt them.

One day he made a long rope with grass. He then tied these ropes to the feet of two eagles and in this way thought that he could be brought up to God's kingdom.

The Eagles then raised Adam to a height of ten "cubbe," but the rope broke and he fell on the branches of the trees and then to the ground. He hurt himself so badly that when Eldom returned he found him ruined by his fall.

Eldom was very sorry for Adam and returned to tell this to God. God showed him a way in which he could cure Adam in a few days. Sometimes Adam would go to visit the water and would see the serpents and get frightened. One day he noticed the dolphins and saw how resembled him so and Eldom explained how he had been created.

When Adam heard that the dolphin was his parent he threw himself into the water and was just about to drown when the dolphin saved him and carried him to the south side of the sea. Eldom then went to the banks of the water and brought him back to the Ape.

Eldom said to Adam, "My son, do not risk going into the water, nor trying to fly for it is not your nature to do, but it is your nature to say on the land, but water and air are dangerous for you." Sometime Adam would go to the sea to see his creator, the dolphin, he would look at the fish and say to himself, "I have hard luck on the earth, I cannot fly nor swim, but have to live on vine garden with the other animals."

Adam then lived on the earth for thirty-two years. He lived on grapes, which the sun had dried.

After thirty-two years Eternity said to God: "The culturer of the vines needs a comforter and companion."

God said to his comfort, "I will have my power with your willing do whatever you desire," and he called Venus and said: "I have faith in you and I want you to go on the earth and create a companion for Adam. You will go to the Ape vine gardens for power and name of God and his comfort willing call the generative doves, when you call for them in the name of God there will appear two generative doves. They will build a nest and you will give them your milk. After twenty-one days you will return and whatever you find you have created you will give to Adam."

Venus obeyed and went to the Ape where there appeared two doves, just as Eternity said. Then after twenty-one days Venus returned to the nest and found a creature who was very beautiful and resembled the Sun.

Venus took the creature in her arms and said: "Must I give this pretty creature to Adam who is so ugly?"

She then returned to God's kingdom and said: "Mother, she is too beautiful to give to Adam, I will not leave her to the culturer of the vines."

Eternity said: "You will not do that. You will bring her back to the culturer of the vines."

Venus returned and found this creature more beautiful than ever and said: "I will never give her up to Adam."

She again returned to Eternity who answered: "A human being cannot live in heaven. You must give her up and she and Adam will get along together very nicely on the earth."

When God noticed that Venus was discontented and was not willing to do what Eternity demanded he said: "I want you to obey my comforter. If not you will be severely punished by me."

Venus then returned to the earth and said to the beautiful creature: "I am your mother. You will stay on the earth

according to God's wishes. Your name will be Eve. You will be Adam's comforter and companion. He is asleep and when he awakes you will call him by name and be his friend. You will tell him that you are there because God wished it and you will never disobey him. If you disobey Adam you are disobeying God and Eternity."

Venus led Eve to the place where Adam was sleeping and then left her.

When Adam awoke and saw Eve there he became frightened because he had never seen a human being of such great beauty. He called Eldom to his rescue.

Meanwhile Eve was following him and calling him by name.

Adam said: "Who are you and from where do you come?"

Eve responded: "I am your comforter and I was sent here by God. We are to live together for the rest of our lives."

Then Adam began to get more friendly. He took her with him and gave her some grapes to eat. He said, "This is our food." He showed her all the vines and all that he had done. He built a small hut of branches and did everything possible to make her happy.

Eve was given to Adam the twelfth day of March when he was the age of thirty one and a half years.

They had become very good friends and on the thirtieth day of March when Eldom returned he found Adam with a companion.

He was very angry because Eve had come without his knowledge or consent.

Eldom said to Eve: "Who are you and who gave you permission to come here?"

When Adam saw how Eve was being treated he stepped forward and said: "Leave my companion alone. She is mine

and no one shall harm her.”

Eve said to Eldom, “I am on the earth in the name of God and Eternity.”

Eldom became a little more calm and answered: “I am glad that you have a companion. I did not mean what I said.”

After a few days Eldom went to God’s kingdom to be sure that Eve was put on the earth with God’s consent.

God said: “If you do anything to harm Eve I will punish you severely. You take care of Adam and let Adam take care of his companion.

Eldom promised never to harm Eve, but he had great hatred towards Venus and Eve.

Venus always visited Eve and told her to be with Adam as he was her master.

Adam learned to respect Eve more every day. He showed her how to cultivate the vines. He no longer cared for Eldom. His love was all for Eve and the vines.

Eldom was always trying to get revenge on Venus and Eve, but he thought of God’s punishment, so he wanted to do something secretly to harm them. He asked all the animals for advice none of them would go against Adam and Eve.

He then went to the water and called the dolphin and said to him: “Our son was so good and obedient until Venus brought Eve to him. Now he does not respect or regard us as his parents. His love is only for Eve.”

The dolphin responded: “I am more experienced than you. We have not crated for our good. We create for the love of our superior and according to his desires. I have created for the love of the water. When you called me I came because I knew it was God’s wish. I have given my milk to create your son, Adam, not because I want him to be mine or yours but for God’s love. Adam belongs to God just as you do and

must do as he wishes. He is free to roam the earth because it belongs to your heavenly Father and not to you or Adam. God takes care of Adam the same as he takes care of you. I and my phenomena cannot roam on the land as we are not god's children. It is not natural for us to be on land. We are children of the water and cannot live without it. You are children of God and cannot live without land. You cannot live in the water.

“Do not be like the ‘serpents’ who were not content either on land or in the water.”

Eldom was not pleased with what the dolphin said, so went to seek advice from the serpents. He said to them: “We must agree among ourselves because every phenomena in the earth all agree with Venus, we are in the earth without privileges, because she was always be annoying to us.”

The serpents agreed with Eldom, and found a secret method for everything.

Eldom always told Eve that the serpents were the wisest and most obedient of all the phenomena on land and water.

Venus went to visit Eve on the nineteenth anniversary, and said that she was not able to see her for such a long time because she had to travel around the earth, this being the one hundred and third year that the planets were ruling the earth.

This was Eldom's plunder.

The third day of Venus' command, Eldom transformed himself into a serpent.

While Eve was resting in her little hut, she turned one side and said: “Eve, I want to show you the most important duty on the earth which you do not know.”

The serpent departed saying: “I cannot do any more than to tell you how to be more calm and tranquil. The serpent that you see following Adam will give you peace and

tranquillity. He will be near you and you will not know it.”

When Eve heard this she went to Adam and their love turned to malice.

After two months Eve was getting fiercely disturbed and she didn't know what the trouble was, and knew no one but Eldom, because her mother, Venus, was on the one year's command.

Eve was troubled and went to ask Eldom's advice.

Eldom said that it probably was something you had eaten that disturbed you and Eve believed what he told her, He and the serpents were very happy in the thought that they were getting revenge on Adam and Eve.

Eldom reported all to his celestial Father and said to him, “Oh celestial Father, on the vine master's companion there has been a great infection and it will spread throughout the earth and will infect all the vines if we don't destroy this disease.”

God looked at Eldom saw that it was all a fraud, said, “I put the land under your control and beware if you do not obey my commands. I will go myself and destroy the infections.”

Eldom returned to the land and God sent Domins to be at the command of Venus.

God said to his comforter: “Seems to me Eldom gets Adam and Eve to disobey my commands.”

Eternity said to God: “For my sake do not harm Adam and Eve; I believe Eldom is at fault.”

When Venus arrived with God celestial Eternity was worried. Venus asked, “What is the trouble with my mother?”

He called Venus and said: “I believe this planet is betraying me. I want you to follow my comforter.”

God said to Eternity: "It appears as though there are cheats and frauds on the earth. We must go and see what is going on. We must acquaint Eve with Venus, but we must go in the day time, so as not to frighten Adam."

They then descended to the earth and when they saw Adam among the vines and Eve in her hut, God said to Eternity: "You and Venus go in the hut and I will see what Adam is doing."

God called Adam by his name and said to him: "Adam, Adam, how is my vine garden?" Adam never saw him before, nor heard his voice, therefore he did not know who he was.

When Adam heard God's voice he was very frightened and when he turned and saw him standing before him he wanted to escape.

God said to Adam: "Adam, Adam, don't be frightened. I am your Celestial Father. I am your Master and Eldom has come to teach you."

Adam, who was very much confused and frightened said: "You are the father whom I have often wished I could see, but Eldom did not give me wings so that I could fly to your heavenly kingdom."

God asked him where Eve was.

Adam said that she was in her hut resting.

Meanwhile Eternity was in Eve's hut calling her by name.

When she heard her name she raised her eyes to Eternity and said: "Who are you to call me by name?" She showed her to Venus and said: "Do you know her?"

Eve said: "Yes, she is my mother."

Venus said: "This is our Celestial mother Eternity; she came down to see you and free you of your suffering and infection."

Then Eve was sure to whom she was talking. Eternity

asked: “What have you been eating to swell you stomach?” Eve said to her: “The snake confused my mind.” Eternity said to Eve: “You have had three transmissions of light from the snake. You will have three for me, three for yourself, and then you will cure your infection.”

Eve said to Eternity: “Have I offended your willingness and God’s name to be a friend of the snake? If I have I don’t want to stay on God’s earth. I want you to destroy me.”

Then Eternity told her that she would soon be free from all her sufferings and that she should not have faith in serpents.

During this time Adam arrived with God.

When Eve saw Adam she said: “See, this is my mother.”

Adam showed her God and said: “This is our heavenly father.”

God looked at Adam and Eve and then called Eldom and said to him: “I have trusted you with the land and why did you disobey me?”

Eldom responded: “I have obeyed you and cultivated the vines. I have created many things because of your wishes. I created Adam and took care of him because he was my son. When Venus brought Eve he forgot about me and thought of nothing but of her. I do not want Venus to enter my land. She has no right here and therefore I decided to get revenge.”

When God heard Eldom talk in such a manner to her he became as furious as a beast and said: “You miserable servant, I trusted you and you disobeyed me so. As your punishment you will have to travel around the moon fifty-two times a year. If you fail to do this I will take everything away from you. I will give you neither air, water, land, nor the right to be my servant.”

Eternity said: "Heavenly father, will you obey me and listen to me?"

God said: "I will obey you forever."

"Then," said Eternity, "calm yourself and do not be so angry at Eldom. Do not scare Adam and his comfort, Eve. This is the first time they saw us together and they should not remain on the earth afraid, and they should not learn from you to be angry."

God said: "I will calm myself for your love."

He then was as peaceful as though nothing had happened, and Eldom went to the moon to begin his punishment.

Adam was very frightened when God was angry because he knew that he was also guilty. He went to God and confessed and God responded: "Adam, I am glad that you told the truth. Those that tell the truth are pardoned, but those who deny it are severely punished. Those who lie in my presence will be put off the earth."

Adam felt more brave when he heard what God had told him and said that he was always ready to obey him.

God commanded Adam as follows:

To multiply so that the fruit of blood would populate the land.

To do nothing against the wishes of God or Eternity.

Not to abandon the vines, as they were his health.

To love everything as himself.

That he was the first man and Eve was the first woman, and that they should love each other and not be deceived by the serpents.

To teach their children all that is right.

He was master of the land but everyone had the right to enter it, and everybody was obliged to cultivate it, otherwise

the serpents would ruin everything.

God called the planet command Jove and said to him: "I trust you. You must watch Adam and be his protector. Venus will protect Eve. If you and Venus do not agree, neither will Adam and Eve. You, who represent their father and mother, must set them a good example."

He called Adam and said to him: "Adam, Jove will represent your father. I want you to obey and respect him, but in case you do not agree with Jove you call me, any time. I will come to you. I am your only Celestial Father. In case I do not come you will hear my voice, which will tell you what to do."

Eternity said to Venus: "I want you to take good care of Eve and I want Eve to have great respect and love for her companion, Adam."

God then departed and left Adam and Eve without Eldom to command them.

Adam was always a friend to the animals found on the Ape, and he and Eve were afraid of the serpents whom God told them not to trust.

It was the month of November.

One day when Adam was among the vines he saw a bear with three little ones. He was surprised at his sight and went to tell the news to Eve.

When he wanted to open the door of the hut where Eve was, Venus stopped him. Meanwhile he heard Eve give a loud cry.

He thought that Venus was harming her and said: "Leave her alone as I will defend her."

Venus then turned around with a baby in her arms and said: "Here, Adam is your first fruit."

He remained very much surprised and said: "What is

this?”

Venus said: “It is yours and take good care of him.”

Adam then thought of calling God because it was six months since he had heard from him.

He went out of the hut and cried to God, who answered: “Adam, this is your first fruit and you will have more. Take care of him.”

Adam then went back to the vines holding his child closely to him. He again saw the bear and how she was nursing the little ones. He went there and said to the bear: “My child needs to be nursed also.” He made the bear nurse the baby. He then took the baby and went back to Eve and told her how the bear nursed the baby and said to her: “You are the mother; you must nurse the baby like the bear.” This was the first experience of Adam and Eve in providing for their children.

Being that God told Adam that Eve was to have other children he thought that this would happen on the same night.

They stayed awake all night expecting and when morning came they told God that they had no more children as he had told them.

God said: “You will have other children but not yet. Eighteen months must pass before you have another child, but be very careful of your first one. His name will be Abel.” Adam returned to Eve and told her everything God had told him.

The child grew up very healthy and was very extraordinary.

Abel was born in the afternoon of November twenty-second, year fifty-two. Adam and Eve were his parents.

He grew in his native home until April of the next year, but Eldom and the serpents were trying to harm the child

and Adam, noticing this, called God to protect him against the serpents.

God told Adam to take Eve and the child and go to the farthest point of Egypt, which was near the water.

The serpents could not go to Egypt and they would therefore be away from harm. He told them to take as many animals as he could with him and when they were safely there he should return and see the mountain afire and therefore destroy all the serpents.

Adam, with his wife and child, went into the farthest corner of Egypt, not because he wanted to but because the Ape was burned and it was necessary for him to go some place else to live.

## CHAPTER III.

### ADAM AND EVE IN CAINON

Adam and Eve in their new land which was at the head of the island of Cainon were deprived of many necessities. They had a few domestic animals, with them such as deer, lions, buffaloes, cows, sheep, dogs and chickens. The rest, such as serpents, wolves and other beasts they left on the Ape.

In the month of July, fifth three, Adam set fire to the Ape to destroy all the serpents; but part of the other beast fled to the south to a very hilly and wooded forest which was very distant from the Ape.

The mountain which was then called Tavane, but which today is Abyssinia was a very wooded place. The climate was extremely warm and all the wolves, serpents, apes, etc. went to Tavane or Afra, which is today Africa, for refuge.

Adam and Eve were now safe from the beast which Eldom had created. They had to live on fish because there was nothing else for them to eat. Adam planted different kinds of fruit, just as he had on the Ape, but they had not yet become ripe.

On July 5, fifty four, Eve became the mother of another son, which they called Cain. Adam, very joyous over having two children, called God to tell him the glad news. God told him to take good care of his son.

Adam now knew how to raise children. He always said to Eve: "The more children we have the happier we will be."

Abel was already walking at the time Cain was born and Adam said: "As soon as Cain is able to walk we will have another one because God will not send another child until then."

Adam and Eve were dressed in a certain kind of grass which grew near the water.

On November 18, fifty five, Adam had another pleasant surprise. Eve gave birth to a little girl.

Adam again called God who came with Eternity and said: "Take good care of this daughter of yours, who is the first woman born on Earth. See that she becomes a good woman. Her name will be Ola."

Adam asked why Abel and Ola were so pretty, just like their mother, and Cain was so very dark complexioned and resembled neither his father nor his mother.

God said that it was nature, which you cannot go against. Nature is just like God's wishes. He does as He wants and everyone must be satisfied.

Adam and Eve were very happy that their daughter, Ola, was so beautiful. She had long, blond hair as though she was six years old, Adam never tired of admiring her.

On September third, year fifty-seven Eve again gave birth to a son, whom they called Ido.

God said: "Have care of all your children, especially Ola."

On October twenty-third, fifty-eight, Eve became the mother to a son, who was all hairy when he was born.

Adam said: "It is the wish of nature. We cannot go against it. God wished this child to be called Dorion."

Adam was very happy to have these five children who were called Abel, Cain, Ola, Ido and Dorion. He always told Eve he wanted more children.

On February fourth, year sixty, there was born another daughter. Adam called God and asked him what he wished to name her and God said: "Call her Cola and take good care of her, as she is the second woman on the land."

Cola was blond just like her mother, and she was very graceful.

Another daughter was born on August ninth, year sixty-one. According to God's wishes she was called Spera.

She was very dark, tall, thin and graceful. She was very nervous and rather proud.

A son was born on May eleventh, year sixty-three. God wishes him to be called Domen, and said that this was the last one, and they would have no more.

Adam returned to Eve very sorrowful because God had told him that they would have no more children and he wished more. The more he had the more he wanted.

Adam and Eve now had eight children: five boys and three girls who were named Abel, Cain, Ola, Ido, Dorion, Cola, Spera, and Domen.

Adam nourished his children with fish, fruit, and milk.

When Abel reached the age of twenty years God ordered Adam to unite his children into couples: Abel with Ola, Cain with Cola.

Abel was very handsome and of medium height. Ola was beautiful and very tall.

Cain was very dark and tall. He had a cruel nature. Cola was small, graceful and clever.

Cain, who was so tall, did not want Cola, who was short. He thought that Abel, who was short should not have Ola because she was too tall for him.

He became very jealous and the thought of killing his brother came into his mind. Then he could have the beautiful Ola and leave Cola.

One day, while Cain and Abel were alone watching the cows on the mountain of Cainon, Cain thought that there was a good opportunity to kill Abel without being seen by anyone. So he took advantage of this. Cain gabbled Abel around his neck from the back and squeezed him so hard he choked him, killing him instantly, he then buried him beneath the stones.

Suddenly he heard a loud voice say: "Cain, Cain, you have a brother dead in my earth. I will put on you the disgrace so there will be death and disgrace."

When Cain heard God's divine voice it was the first time he had and he was very frightened. Raising his head he saw God before him. He fell backwards and rolled down the mountain, stones falling on top of him and breaking him into pieces.

His head rolled in front of Adam and Eve's hut.

When Adam saw his son's head he knew that something serious had happened. While he was holding the head in his hands he heard God's voice saying: "Adam, do not cry for your son, Cain, who put death upon the earth. He killed his brother, Abel, and I have disgraced and punished him. Take all Cain's flesh and burn it on the banks of the river. Abel, who is now buried underneath the stones, you will take and bury on the plain."

Adam did as God told him to do.

As soon as Adam had finished burying Abel there started

a heavy rain which lasted three days and three nights. God's voice was heard crying: "Away from my earth. I don't even want the dust of your sin on my land." This was the end of Adam's first child.

Adam became so very sad over the death of Abel that he finally became ill. His other children tried to comfort him, but he would not be comforted.

Adam was willing to die and not be in the earth without his son, Abel. He said to his family: "Don't lose any time with me. My only consolation is death."

God called him and tried to encourage him, but Adam would not listen. One day God told him that he would always comfort him and be with him. Adam responded: "Everything is finished for me. My heart has been closed and cannot open again. You, who are so powerful, could have rescued my son. Why do you care so little for me and my family?"

But Adam did not want to listen even to God. It seemed to him that everything was finished for him on the earth. He said to God: "If you are really the Celestial Father and you could not rescue my son Abel, how can you heal my broken heart without my son Abel."

Then Adam turned to his daughter Ola and said: "I want you to represent the leader of the family because my mind is broken."

God answered: "You are right, but this was destined by Eldom. I was too far away at that time and could not rescue him in time."

Ola, who was Abel's wife, also had to act as father to her child because Adam did not have enough strength to do so.

He called the entire family around him and said: "This is my last command, and henceforth Ola will represent me.

Ido must follow and respect her. Dorion must accompany Cola and do the same as Ido. Domen must accompany Spera and do as the others do. You must all agree with one another and will go and live elsewhere. We will take all we can with us and leave this land of sorrow and will go to a more quiet land.”

Even and her family always cried for Adam’s sake and tried their best to console him.

They all agreed with Adam and went to live in the south of the island they named the place Caion. Caion was a very nice place and the climate was mild. They planted fruit trees and brought with them many animals, but Adam was still very sad and became very stupid.

God with Eternity, Venus and Jove went to visit Adam, but he no longer cared for anyone. His weak mind was constantly calling for his son Abel. Eve followed him around and tried to reconcile him but that was impossible. He would not listen.

God commanded Ola to take her father’s place and that everyone should respect and obey her. Shortly after, on May thirtieth, year seventy-four Ola became mother to a child whom they named Ombus.

Ombus, son of Ola and Abel, was the first born on the land called Caion.

When Adam saw that the child resembled his father he called God and said: “Heavenly father, I again believe in your power and that you gave Ola a son resembling Abel and I am glad to name him Ombus.”

God answered: “Adam, I will do everything for you and your family, but I could not stop that which was destined by Eldom.”

For about eight years Adam lived, but was very sad and

unhappy in the year eight-one he died. All of his children remained in Ola's command.

After Adam's death God and Eternity came to his children and said: "Your father shall now be mine and I will reward him for what he has done for me."

For a long time after the death of Adam, Eve and her children were very sorrowful.

Adam had left three families: Ola and Ido, Dorion and Cola, Domens and Spera.

Eve died not long after Adam, there then remaining only the children under Ola's command.

Ombus, son of Ola and Abel was growing to be very intelligent. Ola and Ido had twelve more children with Ombus making thirteen.

(Dear Reader: — Now that the generation is growing I will only mention the most important names.)

Of Ola's thirteen children there were six boys and six girls.

Dorion and Cola had four daughters.

Domen and Spera had fourteen children, eleven sons and three daughters.

These were all Adam's grandchildren.

Ombus, son of Ola and Abel, married the first daughter of Dorion and Cola in the year ninety-six.

In those times the people nourished themselves on milk, fish and fruit.

Ola invented some sort of linen in order that they might begin to wear clothes. Men and women were all dressed alike.

They all remained united in Caion under Ola's command until one hundred and forty years after Adam's birth. Then Ola's first son took command.

Ombus was very good to the people and was respected by

everyone. In the year one hundred and forty-two Ola died.

After her death the people neither heard nor saw God. They simply did as Ombus said.

Ombus ruled until the end of the year two hundred seventeen and then his first son took his place.

Ombus' son, Domen, married a young woman named Dave.

Domen was respected and obeyed until the year two hundred and twenty-four. Then the people began to change.

Only four hundred and twenty-two families remained under his command.

Twenty-nine families went to live in Cainon and formed a group commanded by Daven.

Then thirteen other families formed a group in a region called Caiol, which was located near the Ape mountains.

All these people still had the beautiful Ola in their minds and tried to do as they knew she would want them to.

In the year two hundred seventy-four Sara took command.

Sara was very brave and went away from Caion, took a few friends and went to Caiol and then took all the people under his domination. He was respected and liked by everyone.

The population of Caion was much smaller than Caiol and every three months had a new Commander.

In Cainon the people were dominated by King Alton. He was very cruel and he began to develop their malice to disturb the other people.

The people of Caion found all the wicked things that were being done. They found Alton, who was very cruel and terrified the entire population. He sent men to the women of Caion. In order to increase the population every man had from two to five wives. The women were slaves and had to work hard to produce all the men's needs.

This continued from the year two hundred seventy-four until three hundred-four.

During the years that young Sara was in Ape with some of his people, he abandoned the Caiol and had made his residence in Ape.

Sara of Ape knew what Alton was doing and the people of Caion went to Caiol not to be annoyed by the people of Cainon. Sara was determined to overthrow Alton and free the people of Cainon.

One day he gathered an army of men and went to fight with Alton. When the tall Alton saw how small Sara was he thought he could easily overthrow him, and said: "You may count yourself dead if I but strike you once."

Sara said that he was not afraid and then the battle began. They fought for about four hours and Sara was the most successful, but the victory was not decided.

Finally Alton said: "Let us not use our hands. See what we can do with our staffs."

This was to take place the next day. Alton, who was so large, prepared a branch of a tree and Sara had a smaller stick more adapted to his size.

When Sara saw Alton's weapon he called to God for help, saying: "Heavenly Father! You told Adam and Ola that your power was infinite; that you help those who come to you. I want enough strength to overthrow this enemy of your people."

As soon as he finished he heard a voice saying: "Sara, Sara, do not be afraid; go and fight your enemy and I will help you."

When Sara heard this he picked up courage and approached his enemy. He began to hit in all directions and was so swift that Alton did not have a chance to use his

weapon.

Alton finally threw the branch of the tree with all his might, but it did not hit Sara, and landed in the ground. Then Sara began hitting Alton so hard that he fell to the ground.

Sara broke his head off of his body and threw it among the men of Alton's army, saying: "Here is the head of your famous Alton. I have killed him and will free all the women of Caion who are slaves. God's strength is stronger than Alton's."

While Alton's people were fleeing from Sara, he followed them to Cainon and when they arrived there he said to them: "I do not want to harm you. I first want to free the women."

Then the men gave up the women of Caion and Sara brought them back to their homes.

He said to the men of Caion: "You cowards. Why did you not defend your women? Why did you let them be robbed? Don't you know that you must protect your wives? I have come from Caiol to defend them. I have killed your enemy Alton. If you never defend your wives from danger you will never gain their love and they will always remain slaves to the people of Cainon."

Sara talked very badly and did not regard anyone. He was widely acclaimed by the women who gave him many garlands and wreaths of flowers.

He returned to Cainon and said to the people: "I want you to leave the people of Caion free and peaceful or I will do to you as I did to your ruler, Alton."

The people of Cainon repented what they had done and asked to be pardoned.

Sara, while on his way back to Caiol, encountered five robbers who had stolen a girl from Caiol and were taking her

to Cainon.

He immediately assailed these robbers and liberated the beautiful Spera and after this, his second victory, he turned to his companions saying: "Wait for me as I have a duty to accomplish." Then he said to Spera: "You will follow me because you also have a duty to perform."

Together they ascended to the top of the mountain. Sara called God and said to him: "Heavenly Father! I want to thank you for the strength you gave me to kill Alton and free your people from slavery, and also for giving me strength to save Spera from the robbers."

As soon as he had completed his prayers he heard God's voice saying: "Sara, Sara, you have won two victories and now you are worth of Spera's love as a reward for your courage.

Sara turned to Spera saying: "Will you reward me with your love?"

Spera responded: "This is the wish of our Heavenly Father, and you have rescued me from the robbers so I will reward you with all my love, which will always be yours."

Sara and Spera then embraced and went together to Sara's companions who had helped him in his battle. Sara said to them: "Brothers, I, with your assistance have been victorious over our enemy and have freed the people of Caion and ourselves. If you had not overthrown Alton, he would have disturbed our homes. Now we are safe and our women are also safe."

Sara and his companions returned to their people after their victories. Sara was covered with garlands and crowns of flowers given to him by women of Caion. There were many feasts held in honor of Sara and everyone was glad to have him among them again. After his triumph Sara became

king and put the people of Caion under his dominion. He was respected by everyone. Soon after he became king he married the beautiful Spera.

In those times it was the customs in Caiol that when a man married a woman he went among the people and called God to show him his wife saying;

— Heavenly father, master of our first father, Adam, I swear in your presence to always be united by my companion.

Then they would hold hands and in this manner they would be married. The rule of Caion was that when a man took a woman for his wife they would go in the light of the moon and say: “We swear to remain united as man and wife.”

In Cainon they would go to the banks of the ocean and say: “By the strength of the earth we are now man and wife.”

These were the matrimonial customs in the three hundred and seventy-fourth year after our first father Adam.

The people lived on fish and fruit. They did not even hear of meat at that time. They used their animals only for their skins which they used for clothes. Their clothes were made of furs dried in the sun. Their huts were made of vines and branches.

Now we will return to the rulers of the various kingdoms.

In Caion they changed their king every week. These were chosen from those who were good talkers.

In Cainon they changed their king every and ninetieth day. Those who were the strongest in magnetism were chosen.

Sara, who saved the people from the gigantic Alton, was king of Caiol and he ruled everyone and kept the people under his control. He was respected by everyone until the three hundred and twenty-second year after our first father Adam. After this the people became to separate in different

ways. Some believed in Cainon and some in Caion. They no longer agreed and did not want to respect Sara.

Then Sara with his wife and followed by several good friends, seven families in all, went to old place to be alone in peace. Sara remained king of the seven families. King Sara said to his people, "Brothers, in 376 we will organize the oldest ape, who will remain forever."

There were all kinds of fruit on which and his friends nourished themselves. At that time the people began to eat meat from the different animals, such as deer, bears, and rabbits. There were many of these animals in the village of Ape.

In the year 381 in Caiol the people were divided into two parties. Some of them believed in Cainon people and some in Sara. The party believing in the Cainon were told they must beat the twins, Caiol and Cainon. They formed another village and called it Nile. The Nile was ruled by Lafa. He was the first ruler of the Nile and he was very false to his people and to other countries.

Every year the people of Caiol chose a new king. This was in the year four hundred twenty-two, after Adam.

In the year four hundred twenty-three Dorio took command of Caion. He was very bad, cruel and severe toward the people.

In four hundred twenty-five Dorio declared war against Cainon, Nail and Caiol and with his terror constrained all the people under his dominion.

The people of Cainon, who were very cruel and always seeking revenge, did not stay long under Dorio's reign. They rebelled and soon returned to their own land.

Soon after Caiol and Nail also rebelled and were free from Dorio, so he remained alone with the people of Caion.

In four hundred thirty-two Caiol and Ape were again peaceful. Sara took Caiol under his dominion and was widely acclaimed.

Sara died the next year leaving Spera in his place. The people reunited with Caiol and chose a new king every six months.

In Caion there lived a man named Dorio, who was very shy and fearful.

The king, Dorio, did not want anyone bearing his name live in his kingdom. He had this poor man transported from Caion and took him to the wild mountains of Cainon. He gave him for a wife a woman with only one arm. He told them that when they were hungry they should eat stones and trees.

Dorio was also told that if descended this mountain he would be burned alive. Dorio and his wife, Osa, were very unhappy and lived on wild fruit and grass.

They had sixteen children, seven sons and nine daughters.

The seventh time that Osa became a mother she had triplets, two girls and one boy, whom they named Fit Indi, who became the first prophet of the land.

When Dorio's children were able to walk they began to look around for food and only found weeds and grass and wild fruit.

One day when Fit Indi was fifteen years of age he was walking in the woods with his brothers when he heard a voice saying: "Fit Indi, here I am to acquaint you with God, your Heavenly Father."

When they this voice they were very frightened and began to run. While the others escaped Fit Indi entangled his foot in a bush and fell to the ground and was unable to move further.

Then God called him saying: “Do not try to escape because I am your Celestial Father God.”

Then Fit Indi became a little more brave and said: “If you are really God, why don’t you find some food for us?”

God responded: “I will give you food. You will be able to cultivate the land. I will give you seeds to produce food and you will no longer need grass and weeds.” He raised his hand saying, “Here is the first fruit called grain. You plant these every two feet.”

Then he said: “Here is the fruit that grows underneath the earth called the potato. I will give them to you to plant and to eat.”

Then there fell to the ground a large quantity of potatoes and formed a large heap.

God said: “Plant a potato seed every four feet and you will have a large amount of them.”

Then he raised his hand saying: “Here are some pumpkin seeds which you will plant every twelve feet. When you need me call and I will come to you.”

God then departed and Fit Indi remained alone.

Later came his father and his brothers and sisters who told him about the voice they had heard. When they arrived they found Fit Indi eating raw potatoes.

His father, Dorio, thought his son had died and instead found him eating. He asked him what had happened and Fit Indi said: “I talked with our Heavenly Father and he told me to plant these seeds and we would no longer have to eat grass and weeds.”

Then they started to work in order to cultivate the ground the best way they could. They planted and cultivated all the seeds as God told them to and soon developed into all the different vegetables.

Each grain of wheat had three hundred six-six stalks; the potato seed, eight-five potatoes; thirty-three of which were to replant and fifty-two were to eat. The pumpkin seed had from forty-seven to forty-nine pumpkins.

Dorio and his family were no longer in need of food. They ate the potatoes raw and roasted the wheat on fire made from wood.

These were the first seeds God gave to Fit Indi. Fit Indi's father was very happy when these fruits began to grow and he always prayed to God and thanked him that they no longer had to go in search of food.

One day, two years after this time, several men from Caiol were hunting through the forest and they came to Dorio and he being too sincere, immediately showed them the seeds.

When these men saw the seeds and how they were cultivated they returned to Caiol and told everything to their people. They all decided that they would go and steal these seeds.

One night in Autumn they went to Fit Indi's and stole a large quantity of grain and potato and pumpkin seeds and brought them all to Caiol to plant.

When Fit Indi discovered there had been something taking his seeds he raised his head toward heaven saying: "Oh, Heavenly Father, you who are so powerful. Tell me who has stolen my seeds. You gave them to me and not to anyone else and I will go and claim them."

Then he saw a cloud descending and when it was a short distance from him he saw God and Eternity. He was very much surprised as he had never before seen Eternity.

God said: "Fit Indi, the people of Caiol have taken your seeds and planted them. I will advise you when the time comes and you will destroy everything. You alone

will be master of the seeds. You will be the first prophet on the land. You must conquer the people and be my representative on the earth.”

When Fit Indi heard that he was the first prophet he did not know what this meant but was very happy to hear that he was to destroy all the seeds where were stolen and was very anxious for the time to come.

Finally the potatoes and pumpkins began to grow and one day God called Fit Indi saying: “The time has come when you are to destroy the seeds. You will go to Caiol and stand in the center of where the seeds are planted, stamp your left foot on the ground and call me. I will come and destroy everything which was stolen because stolen things should not be in the light.”

Fit Indi then started on his way. It took ten days to walk from Ail to Caiol.

When he arrived there he did as God and cried: “Father, master of the earth, who has infinite power, who has saved the good people and punished the bad, here I am among the stolen seeds. Now do as you wish.”

When the people of Caiol saw him among the plants they all gathered together and started toward him crying: “Out of our field, out of Caiol. If you do not go we will kill you.”

Fit Indi responded: “Robbers, you have stolen my seeds but I will destroy them all.”

There appeared a large cloud and began to pour water and hail as large as stones. The people of Caiol had to escape and Fit Indi remained there looking at this terrible tempest. The grain was destroyed, the potatoes and pumpkins were frozen.

Fit Indi felt very brave and courageous when he saw how strong God was. When the tempest had stopped he

thanked God for his help and returned to his home very much contented.

He told his father everything God had done to punish the robbers.

The prophet's father told him everything that the king Dorio had done and the prophet answered: "Have courage, father, if God gives me his strength I will take revenge on them."

After hearing his father's story, Fit Indi called God saying: "Heavenly Father, master of us all. Your infinite power which saved us from our hunger, who gave stolen from us by Caiol. You gave me strength to return us the food we are eating and who destroyed the seeds stolen from us by Caiol. You gave me strength to return to my family without being hurt by the ferocious beasts. I want to take revenge on Dorio for what he has done to my father. He made him come up here to this mountain to die of hunger, but you saved him."

Then he heard a voice say: "Have courage as I am with you. I will give you strength whenever you need it. You can call me whenever you wish and I will come and give you assistance. Now I want you to move with your family to the west part of Caion and keep peace among those people."

Fit Indi and his family departed and went to live in the southwest part of the Caion and began to cultivate the land.

They built five huts and lived peacefully by the water. This was in the year four hundred fifty five when Fit Indi was nineteen years of age.

Let us return to the other villages.

The people of Caiol were very frightened and went to live in Nile and said the prophet, Fit Indi, was the destroyer of the people.

The King, Lafa, reunited his people saying: "We must all be ready. We must go where Fit Indi lives and try to overthrow him."

They took their weapons and went to Aiel but found no one there and returned to their own town again.

The ruler of Cainon was Cola. He was very cruel to his people. They heard about these seeds that were given to Fit Indi. God had taken everything from them and they had not had any rain for seven years and everything was dry. The people had arrived at a point where they could eat each other.

Fit Indi conquered the people of Caion and put them in his dominion and became King. The people respected him as though he was God himself.

They had all the food from the seeds, while Lafa and Cola suffered from hunger.

Cola sent a group of robbers to Caion to steal the women of that city, but the prophet knew this and awaited them all ready to defend his people.

They arrived at the place where Fit Indi was one night and he said to them: "Those of you who want to steal the innocent women better return to your king. Those who want to obey God may go into my kingdom. You can cultivate the seeds and have enough to eat."

Some of the robbers agreed with the prophet and some were against him.

Then Fit Indi raised his eyes and called God to his rescue to defend the innocents of Caion. Then there arose a strong wind which pushed away all the robbers. Seven of them kept their word to the prophet and remained with him and went to Caion.

The prophet said to those who had listened to him:

“Brothers, God says that no one must steal or kill and those that do will be severely punished. Our God is very powerful and if we obey him we will have his love. If we do not we will not be respected by him.”

When the prophet returned to Caion to his people God ordered him to go to Cainon and destroy all the evil done by Cola and take away all the sins from the earth and to free all innocent people.

The robbers who had returned to their king, Cola, told him everything that the prophet said. Then Cola sent this message to Lafa of Nile. They united in Cainon and agreed to overthrow Fit Indi.

When the prophet went to them they were all ready to go to Caion to overthrow him and do as they wished to his people, but things did not go as they wanted because God was always with the prophet.

Fit Indi arrived in Cainon alone and said that he wanted to talk to Cola.

When Cola came to him he said: “Cola, I am here in God’s name. God does not want you to frighten the innocent people and wants you to leave them in peace and torment them no longer. If you do not do as he wishes you will be severely punished and will be destroyed on the earth.”

When Cola heard this he responded: “God must know that I am hungry and sent you to me so that I can have a good meal as I have not eaten for a long time.”

He started toward Fit Indi but God sent a large streak of lightning and Cola remained paralyzed and could not move. While the people were running to save Cola there arose a tempest and everybody that was trying to kill the prophet was destroyed by the water.

The people of Nile under Lafa’s command were running

to kill the prophet, but God who always took care of his good people, made another tempest arise.

Fit Indi was nearing Cainon and only found dead and injured people and said to those remaining: "Brothers, those of you who wish to abide with God's wishes can go to Caion under my dominion and those who do not want to do this can remain here and be punished by him."

As soon as he had finished talking they all went to him and got on their knees and said that they wished they had known him sooner. Almost all the men of Cainon and Nile were killed. More than half of the women were killed and the remaining one followed the prophet.

In four hundred sixty-three Fit Indi had reunited all the people were saved in the dominion of Caion. With great respect to Fit Indi who commanded the Cainon, the Nile was abandoned. In four hundred sixty-seven the people of Ape all went with the prophet Fit Indi and remained there. The people were all united and were dominated by the prophet. All began to cultivate the land and soon had plenty of food to eat.

Being that there were about nineteen women to every man, God gave the men permission to have ten or fifteen wives in order to increase the population which had become small.

The prophet had twenty one wives and had one hundred nineteen children; one hundred and three sons and sixteen daughters.

The people got along as brothers and sisters under Fit Indi's command. They lived on fruit grown by them and had meat from animals which they found in the woods.

Among the people of Ape there were found twenty two families which were always united in one group. All the men

were expert hunters. The oldest was their leader, whose name was Iota.

Iota was scientific and discovered all kinds of medicinal herbs with which he made medicine. The people called him wise man.

The men of Ape did not want to marry women of other cities and to this the prophet consented. Iota had one wife. He said he could not love more than one. None of the other men had more than one wife.

These families got along very nicely with the wise Iota and they were called Iota's people. Iota was respected by the prophet and all the people.

The first and second wife of the prophet were from Caion. The third was the daughter of Cola of Cainon. He married eight women of Nile, five of Cainon, four of descendant of Caiol, one of Ape.

These were all the prophet's wives, and with God's help he became king of all the people existing on the earth.

The prophet died in the year five hundred and ten. After his death the people were very downcast and sorrowful.

They were under command of his first son, Dave, whom the prophet told to respect the people if he would be respected. Dave did not do this and punished the people for no reason at all. The people tired of this and decided to go and form other villages. When Dave discovered any one trying to do this he had them burned to death. He said the population was too large and he must destroy some. He killed three brothers for no reason.

The other brothers united with a group of men and decided to kill the king and go away to form a new city. The one chosen had to do the killing and he would be king of the new city. The one chosen was the prophet's son and nephew

of king Cola, whose name was Itol.

Itol said to the men in his party:

— During the night you take your families and all your belongings. Steal everything possible and get to Cainon and I shall kill the king.

The men did as they were told and for five nights they were taking provisions to Cainon. The fifth day Dave noticed the peoples were disappearing. He then told his brother Itol to go and get the people and burn them alive.

Itol promised to do this but wanted provisions for himself and fifty other men who going to assail the escaped people

Dave, believing his brother, gave him everything he wanted. Then Itol started out and when his brother was asleep, he returned and killed him.

He was not discovered and he went away with his friends and formed a new city called Cainon.

When the king's family saw that he was killed they were very much upset and excited. They cried and all the people gathered to see the dead king. No one seemed to care much except a few of his friends, because he was not liked by the people. His death occurred in five hundred seventeen.

The dead king's son wanted to take his place but he was not liked by the people either because he was similar to his father and he was only seventeen years of age.

The new king of Caion, Odomens, was liked by the lazy and stupid people.

These people wanted to eat without working. They wanted to live on the honest men's earnings.

Odomens wanted to declare war on his uncle, Itol, of the Cainon, but he did not have the courage with his lazy, stupid men. He wanted to take revenge on Dave, but these men would not help him.

Everybody respected the wise man, Iota. They wanted to kill Odomens and make Iota king.

Iota was very calm and said:

— We will go away from this king and wherever we go we will be in God's dominion. It is better to go without fighting.

Iota and his friends agreed to separate into four sections, one commander in each section who was to rule until the people wished.

The people wanted Iota for king and he said:

— I will always be among you, but I cannot be king. We must agree so that the descendants of Nile can go back there, those of Caiol back to their homes, those of Aiel to theirs and I with my people will go the Ape. I will always help the people of the five cities.

They all agreed with Iota and started off to their respective cities and took food with them and left without saying a word to anyone else.

When the king saw that they were leaving he thought they were going to kill him like his father, so he went and hid in a cave. The people had no idea of doing this and left very calmly and peacefully.

In September, five hundred twenty one, Iota, with the people of Ape, accompanied all the people to their places, Aiel, Nile, and Caiol. Aiel and Nile formed a republic.

In Caiol the ruler was a man named Sara, but everyone was under Iota's counsel and advice. There were six regions, each one with its own ruler.

Caion was under Odomen, and since he was the lazy men's friend, none of them ever worked. They kept women as their slaves.

Cainon, under Itol, agreed very nicely but they always tried

to develop some new witcheries and mysteries so that they could be stronger than the others. Itol had one son and one daughter, who studied spiritualism and all the mysterious witcheries.

Itol had much respect for Iota and his people. He said that Iota was as good as God to his people because he always helped them in time of need.

In Nile the people changed their king every year. He was chosen by the people and when they were undecided they called Iota to decided for them. They never chose a king without his help.

In Caiol and Aiel it was the same as in Nile. These people existed in this peaceful manner for a long time except Caion, where the women were slaves.

In five hundred twenty-six the women agreed to rebel, but later decided it would be better consult Iota first.

A woman, called Sabi, accompanied by five others went to see Iota in Ape. Each one of these women had seven children and had to work very hard. They walked for fourteen days and arrived in time to see the scientific Iota in Ape. When Sabi with her company arrived in Ape all were tired.

Sabi began to talk to Iota and said: "Iota, you who are the God of the earth, who always helps the people, please help us women who are mothers of seven children and come from Caion to seek your help. We are the men's slaves and they treat us like animals. We cannot help ourselves because Odomen says that women must work for the men."

Iota responded: "I cannot tell you anything today, except that I can protect you from the men's laziness. You must wait twenty days before I can tell you how I will help you. You can either wait here or return to Caion as you wish;

meanwhile I will tell the people what has happened to you.”

The women decided to remain in Ape. Iota sent his son, Abra, to the other cities to tell him of these poor women and wanted to gather volunteers to go and assail the lazy men of Caiol. When these people heard of Iota’s wishes for volunteers they immediately gathered their weapons and went to him.

Iota told the women to return to their city and when they saw a large fire on Aiel then they could begin their war against the men and all the people of the other five cities would be ready to help them. The women did so and were all ready to advise Iota when they needed help.

Iota and Itol started out for Caion. When they arrived on Aiel they stopped to await the night and when it became dark they started a large fire to advise the women as they had said.

When the women saw the fire they began to cry: “Down with the men, long live the women.”

When the men heard this they gathered around their king to see what they were to do. But the king himself had seven women against him and said: “I am worse off than all of you, as I have more women against me. The best thing to do is to burn them alive. Then we are sure to win.”

When they were getting ready to do this Iota and his army arrived and began to go against these men.

Iota said to the women: “Mothers, watch your children and we will do the fighting.” And then the battle of man against man began.

The lazy men thought that this army had come to steal the women. They cried, “Take the women, but spare our lives.”

Iota and Itol responded: “You must learn to work and care for your wives or you will all be very severely punished.”

Then Iota and Itol gave the women the power to command the men and if they did not do as they were told they would be punished. Iota and Itol therefore freed the women and made the men get to work. The more wives a man had, the harder he had to work to support them.

The king, Odomus, was tied to a cart which was pulled by his seven wives, all with a whip in their hands, and while they were whipping him they cried: "Pull this cart, which contains your seven wives. If you do not we will whip you harder and punish you for all you have done to the poor mothers."

Iota and Itol left twenty-six younger volunteers to protect the women. In case the men would not obey them they would be punished by these volunteers.

Iota with all his people returned each to their own city and very much pleased that they had freed the women.

Itol thought to himself that the peace between his people and the people of Caion should never have existed before and the people of his Cainon with the lazy men of Caion. I don't want the respect of Iota; he was willing to destroy all the lazy people because they were all traitors and did not use the women with respect.

The people of Ape, Caiol, Nile and Aiel were all very peaceful with one another under the rule of Iota, but the wise ruler died in the year five hundred forty and left in his place to his first son, Pate. Pate was very good and kind and was respected by everybody in the Ape, just as his father had been.

The other cities had changed since Iota's death. The famous Oma became ruler of Nile. He was very strong and courageous and made the people tremble under his power. Labro was king of Caiol. He was a great talker and in this way cheated all of the people by his lies. Lafra was king of

Aiel. He was a very cruel man of few words. He had under his dominion Aiel and Caion because in Caion Sabi, a wise and brave woman, was the ruler.

This state of affairs last until the year five hundred and eight after Adam. Then things began to change and there were many disagreements.

The son of Sabi, commander of Caion, married the daughter of the king of Aiel and they formed a section under the reign of Iobbate and his wife.

Caiol and Nile disagreed and soon declared war on each other. Pate, king of Ape, and Itol of Cainon, made peace between these two cities, Caiol and Nile. In six hundred thirty-four the king, Iobbate of Caion and Nile, who thought he was the most powerful because he had two kingdoms, declare war on Caiol.

King Iobbate united all his men from Caion and Aiel. He went to Caiol and camped all his troops on the southside of the city.

Iobbate cried: "Get in my dominion or I will destroy you all with my powerful strength."

In Ape there lived a young man named Rowena, who was brave and strong and was liked by all the young men. When he heard of Iobbate's war he untied his young men from the age of fifteen to twenty-five years and they started out to overthrow Iobbate.

Iobbate sent a messenger to Caiol to the King, Davete, who was a very good man and did not want war.

The messenger said to Davete: "Oh, king of Caiol, I am sent here by my King Iobbate, who wants an answer from you. If you think you are strong enough to fight him come to his camp with your army. If you do not want to fight you will have to give up your people to him and your life will be

safe.”

Meanwhile Rowena arrived and said to the king: “Have courage. I want to declare war on this famous Iobbate.” He then cried to his men: “The war is on.”

They immediately came forward and went toward Iobbate’s camp. When they arrived they assaulted him and cried: “We have come to punish you for all your evil doings; you who disturbed the peace of the good people.”

Iobbate, stunned by the many blows, responded: “We will fight like men and then see who is victorious.”

Rowena said: “I will give you six days in which to get ready and then the war will be on.”

During these six days Rowena left his men and went to King Davete and said to him: “King Davete, father of the people of Caiol, I do not want you to be frightened by that terrible Iobbate and his people. We will teach them a lesson. You unite all your people and be ready to carry all the injured ones to Caion. We will win this war. All our young men from Ape have good faith in God and God never abandons voluntary men. God always has a great reward for his people. Every man will have to fight ten or twelve enemies. I, myself will fight eighty or ninety and you must be ready to help us.”

Davete, seeing Rowena’s courage, embraced him, saying: “As a reward for your bravery I will put the people of Caiol in your command because I have decided to surrender myself to Iobbate, but since you will be the defender of Caiol, God will take care of you and you will be king.”

Rowena thanked Davete and said: “If God dose not abandon me I will surely be victorious. If you and all the men and women pray for me and my companions, I am sure we will win.”

Therefore Davete and his people all prayed for Rowena and his army and raising their weapons toward heaven said: “Heavenly Father, do not let these weapons fail us in our war against Iobbate, who always disobeys you.” Rowena returned and said: “Keep on praying for our victory.” And the people did so.

Iobbate encouraged his companions by saying: “We are ten times stronger than our enemies and the victory is ours.”

After five days they were ready for war.

## CHAPTER IV.

### ROWENA WITH HIS VOLUNTEERS AFTER FIVE DAYS OF ARIMISTICE

After five days passed, the voluntary commander Rowena does not fear the majority of his enemies. He said to his men: "Brothers, the enemy is ten times stronger than we are, but we should not be afraid because our Father, God, will help his faithful people. I want you all to follow me. We go to victory."

He went forth first ahead of all his men against the enemy. When Rowena saw the King Iobbate of the Caion, he cried to him: "Die, traitor of the law and disobedient to God. God commanded. You tried to disturb the pace of the Caiol people. But God sent me over here to punish you with death."

The king of Caion went to meet Rowena. He thought to get advanced victory over him to kill Rowena, but Rowena did not give him any chance. He struck his enemy on the head with the cane, jerking and jumping everywhere and hit so hard like a ferocious tiger and fast like an electric machine. He did not give him any

chance to defend himself. He broke his interior body. The King Iobbate was mashed to pieces from Rowena's cane and fell to the ground like an empty sack.

His men went against Roewmna and tried to beat him with his cane, but the voluntary troops went to help Rowena and struck his enemy like a storm, as courageous like a lion, and advanced everywhere, breaking the enemy's line and frightened them all. The hero Rowena shouted to his men: "Victory brothers, victory for freedom, for women and children." Rowena with his men advanced every time, everywhere. King David of Caiol sent all his men to re-enforce Rowena. Rowena shouted to his men always: "Victory, brothers, victory. God is above us."

The enemy tried to escape but Rowena did not give them any chance. All the Ape men were the greatest heroes, never stopping for about four months. After the enemy did not have many men left, being either wounded or dead, they shouted for peace and pardon. Men, not having any strength left to defend themselves, asked for peace. Rowena felt sorry for them. He ordered his men to quit and retire and gave the order to the enemy to take all the wounded men away to their own country. Rowena sent some of his own men to help as he went back to Caiol to see King David and gave the great salute.

All the great kings of Caiol sent some men to help carry the wounded enemy to his country.

King David obeyed Roewna and took him by his arm and said t him: "You, Rowena, the hero of Ape. You are the saviour of the Caiol people. You are the God of earth. My people thank you for your great service you gave for the freedom of children and mothers. But I shall recompense you for your great work that you did for us."

Rowena answered: "Tell your people to have faith in God because God helped us. Every step we made he helped us to put down the enemy of Caiol. I killed King Iobbate and some of his men. If we have faith in God and ready to give service to free the women and children again."

King David answered: "Rowena, for victory and freedom, I will give you recompense; giving you my throne and control over my people. You represent the father of the Caiol people and we have great respect and obedience for you, because you are worth it. You shall be my adopted son. You shall be king when I am dead."

Rowena thanked the king and said: "Yes, great king, but I must first ask my king of the Ape. If he is willing for me to accept it I shall. If I refuse he does not give me permission because we are from Ape. We respect the word of God. When he says who does not obey the law disobeys God, the Celestial Father. So we must obey the law and respect God. If I get permission from my king I shall gladly accept."

But King David and all his people wanted Rowena for their king so King David decided to go to the king of Ape himself and explain all to King Pate. King David with great willingness talked to King Pate himself.

All the Caiol women covered Rowena with garlands of flowers to show their appreciation and accompanied Rowena with joy and song. Rowena retreated with his men and returned to Ape.

All the young Caiol women accompanied Rowena with joy and song.

When King David arrived in Ape with great enthusiasm, he said: "Great King Pate, great king and father of Ape, great master of God. For victory that the great Rowena brought to me and my people, loyal king of Caiol he will be. He will

defend and free.”

In the meantime Rowena had returned covered with flowers and leaves that had been given to him by the Caiol women. When the Ape people heard that Rowena had returned they went forth to meet him with joy in their hearts, shouting: “Our hero! Rowena!” King Pate went with the people and shared in their joy and took Rowena by the shoulder and gave the loyal king salute.

The king said to Rowena: “Return to me my greatest hero! God was with you when you triumphed your sacrifice for honor, women’s honor, the love we get. My hero bundled with flowers. God will bless you.”

Rowena asked his king with loyalty and respect: “Our Lord, our father, our king of God, I risk with my men on the battlefield to save the mothers and children. The enemy was multiplied by ten times, but God helps all that honor him.”

All the young Caiol women began their joyous singing for their defender, all the women of Ape went to meet Rowena with his men returning with victory. The daughter of the king united all the women and went forth to receive the hero Rowena.

When the king’s daughter arrived with all the young women they got wise and jealous to see other women there and threw flowers and leaves and sang with joy. All the Venuses saluted the hero with flowers and their love. Rowena gazed at the king’s daughter and was struck with her and answered her salute with harmonious singing.

“Ah, you are the child of the great king. You greet me with green flowers. I answer the salute with victory. I defend all women and set them free. The women’s enemy lay on the field. They are dead, wounded, and will trouble no more,” he said.

Rowena was in a hurry, so he tried to cut the enthusiasm short. But King Pate was talking with King David and King David was asking King Pate for permission to have Rowena control his land.

King Pate said to King David: "Brother King, I willingly give my permission to Rowena to rule your people but your people must respect and obey him."

King Pate then called Rowena and he said: "Rowena, the people want you and God will help. Caiol is your nest. All the children and women that you defended need a father and they ask for you. You have my consent to become their king."

Rowena thanked King Pate and said: "O, great father of the Ape people, how can I thank you for this? You give me consent to be king. The Caiol people belong to me."

King David also gave his consent to Rowena, saying: "In the Gospel of God, in the presence of King Pate and all his people of Ape, I say. For the recompense of Rowena, the loyal hero, we would all have been slaves of King Iobbate, but we have Rowena and his God to thank for the freedom of our women and children.

"For recompense I will turn all my claim over to Rowena; all my country, all my people, if they are willing to be controlled by Rowena and he will be the king of Caiol people."

When the people of Caiol heard this speech turning the throne over to Rowena they all shouted and clapped their hands, saying: "Rowena, our king! Rowena our king! Rowena, our king! We have our defender as king of Caiol and we swear to remain as a brotherhood with Ape. So that two countries will be united as one."

King Pate said to King David: "Brother David, Rowena

will be the king and father of the Caiol people, and you must defend. When the other country knew that Rowena was king of Caiol, they would never think of disturbing the people. They would not have the courage to bother Rowena and his women and children. So you and your people are now free.”

King Pate shook hands with Rowena, giving him enthusiastic congratulations. Rowena then brought up courage to ask for the daughter’s hand: “O great king, great father. How thankful I am for what you have done. I will do whatever you say. I do not wish to disobey, but you will pardon me for what I am going to ask you. I will crave recompense of your flesh.”

King Pate imagined what Rowena would ask for and said: “Rowena, I will do all for you. For the victory you brought to me, I shall cheer you, the premium will be my daughter.”

He took his daughter’s hand and Rowena’s and said: “Here, Rowena, is my daughter. She will belong to you, and king of two countries you will be. See that my daughter Marana, is more to you.”

Ah, the happiness that was Rowena’s when the king gave him his daughter.

Marana and Rowena were engaged in the presence of the two kings, people of two countries, all the people were there, enjoying the happiness of those two, congratulating them.

Rowena wanted to bring another war and so add to his victory. With Marana near him he had double the strength and ability.

Rowena remained king of Ape and Caiol people. He made a great speech promising to defend them, and to rule them with good faith.

He said to all: “Brothers and sisters. I am your king, but

God is our father. We must respect each other; must have faith in God. It is our duty to respect and love. Our duty to be father to our children, and to respect women; to respect and love. If we do not do what is right there will be no peace with your families. We should not deny our father. God is with us to help us and he will defend us from all dangerous wars. We shall be safe and proud of our country.”

The people of both countries cheered the happiness of Rowena and Marana.

The women took the flowers and leaves to Rowena and Marana. Rowena voluntarily marched in parade for over three weeks. King Rowena remained in Ape and sent one of his representatives to Caiol to rule under his name.

## CHAPTER V.

### NEWS OF THE WAR BETWEEN ROWENA AND IOBBATH REACH GIANT ITOL KING OF CAION

When Giant Itol, king of Cainon, heard of the warfare between the Caion and the Aiel, and King Iobbath, they went over and began to bother the Ape people.

Giant Itol became angry against the Caion and Aiel people and swore to obtain revenge of the Ape people. Giant Itol gathered his army and made a speech. He said: "Brothers of Cainon, the lazy people of Caion and Aiel want to disturb the peace of our greatest father, Iota. Iota gave the Caion people great help and respect. He helped the world; he taught the people to take care of themselves. Now, because he was dead, the people of Aiel and Caion went over and disturbed his children in Ape. But I swear to my Bailan to revenge. We must the Caion generation so they will no more bother the peace of Ape. We must go and recapture all the women and kill all the men who are not able to work. But the men who are healthy and able we must keep at work. There shall be no more Caion generations."

King Itol had two children, a boy by the name of Trampol and a daughter by the name of Berlant. The son of Itol was a great deal

stronger than his father. For spiritualism and transletism. He was wild to magnetize everyone with the indelinquent. He had no remorse for he was a magician. He had great power of magnetism, his own mother. He pardoned no one. He had not but murder in his heart. He wanted no other country but Cainon. The people were frightened of him.

Berlant's sister was queen of the witches. Her occupation was to ruin the children in the night; to disconnect all the joints.

One day King Itol called his son Trampol and his daughter Berlant and took them under a tree. He told his daughter: "Remember, this tree I plant for your own sake and your power. You are the queen of transletism. I want you to unite all the witches under this tree so that you can get the midnight wind, and I want you to ruin all the children of Caion and Aiel; destroy all the generations."

Itol, with his daughter and son went to his temple and he said: "Trampol, I build this temple for the name and power of Bailan and the giants must respect this building for Bailan's sake. Get all your circle members and go into Caion with your torch and scare all the lazy men; and any man fit to work bring him here. And any man who is not able to work burn his face with your torch. We must destroy that generation. There should be no lazy blood in the world. You and your men should not disturb the people of Ape. You must respect them. Remember, Iota helped all, so respect his people. I am getting old. I trust the country to you and your sister Berlant so you may cut all the strings attached to the Caion generations that they cannot regenerate. We must destroy all the lazy people."

The Giant Trampol united all his men and explained his father's wishes. The witch Berlant did the same. All armed

with torches they departed for Caion. When Trampol reached there he started his cruelty with the people but the Caion men were afraid because of the war they had just had with Rowena and did not even defend themselves against Trampol.

He captured all the men he needed and returned to his father with a great quantity of prisoners, he put them all to work as slaves, keeping his men as guards to watch them with a whip in their hand. If they did not work they were ordered to be whipped like animals.

They were ordered to let them work, and Trampol's guardians whipped the poor slaves and said: "Work so that you will learn to not disturb the peace."

The poor slaves were always being whipped, and were fed on fish. When Itol saw that his son had brought so many slaves he went to see them and said: "Trampol, you are a real son," and turning to the slaves said: "Breed of the dogs, lazy disturbers of the peace, the scientific Iota helped Caion, and Aiel, and he helped the other countries. You descendants of snakes went over and disturbed his people and I shall treat you as you deserve to be treated. We do not want the dust of your blood in the earth."

He then ordered his men to whip the slaves for three hours. Their legs were bleeding like spring water after the three hours were up. The slaves had to work the land to provide food for the Caion people. They had to dig the crote to hide; they had to build houses of stone and mud for Itol and his people, who before this time had lived in houses made from the branches of trees.

If any slave was not able to work they would kill him and feed him to the slaves. And when they were fed they would have to eat of the bodies of their dead.

They would shout to them: “Eat of your own flesh.”

Any time Itol needed men he sent Trampol to Aiel to obtain them.

Meantime Berlant, the witch, with her clan, were busily occupied destroying the coming generation. As soon as the children were born, the witch Berlant would take and destroy the whole generation in Caion and Aiel and they had no more children for six years, because Berlant had destroyed the generation.

The poor women of Caion and Aiel had no children, no men to work the land.

The old King Itol would divert himself by watching the slaves being whipped and made to work. But after so long God looked after his people. When he saw the destruction of the people of Caion and Aiel he punished the Caion people with a great storm filled with lightning and earthquakes to make Itol, Trampol, and Berlant surrender. But they did not pay any attention.

Itol took his people to his temple and he said: “Pray to our Bailan to save us.”

But Bailan could not repair the damage of God. The temple was struck with lightning. One stroke of lightning hit Trampol and he dropped dead. When Itol saw his son he tried to help him, but he was already dead. Itol also was struck with lightning and died. The temple was mashed to pieces and the people killed.

God for freedom of the women and children destroyed all those people except the witch Berlant. Now and ordered her witches to continue destroying the children.

Some women of Caion tried to domesticate several monkeys to work the land and from this began the breeding of children of different color and race.

Berlant had the martial law on her people, that if any Cainon men would acquaint themselves with Caion or Aiel women, they would be cut to pieces and fed to the slaves.

Six hundred and forty years after our first father Adam, the women of Caion had domesticated monkeys to work the land and started the colored generation from the monkeys.

In 640 some women of Caion had black children and not to let Berlant find out they hid themselves in the forests.

The people of the Nile felt sorry for the women and their children so they united a few men and sent them to Berlant for commission. They begged her to harm no children but Berlant said: "Tell your king as soon as I am through with Caion and Aiel I will start with Nile and I shall do the same so that you will not feel sorry for others, but for yourselves."

The witch Berlant thought to rule the world. She went to destroy all the children and capture all the men and let them slave. Berlant departed for the Nile with a great ferocity to destroy them.

The Nile people tried to defend themselves but could not in the face of Berlant's power. She advanced everywhere. She captured prisoners and put them with her other slaves and punished them with

heavy work. She swore to have Bailan do to the Nile the same that she did to Caion and Aiel.

Berlant promised her people that in two years Cainon would rule the world because she had power over all; no country compare with her. But God with remorse for humanity stopped her malicious intents.

The people of Nile were discouraged so that they sent a message to Rownea, begging for help, expressing great salute.

When the message from the Nile arrived to Rowena he

read: "O great hero, you are the savior of the people. We are lost. The witch Berlant is destroying the Nile and has already destroyed Caion and Aiel. She is here to do to us what she did to them. We have tried to defend ourselves but it is impossible. Her power is so strong we cannot go against her great power, she magnetizes all, and is capturing all the men and treating them as slaves. In Caion and Aiel they have not prayed for six years. We ask you to advise us, if we must surrender or if you will defend us."

King Rowena upon hearing this message ordered the people of the Nile to surrender and promise Berlant to obey her and said he was willing to give his help. Further: "When I arrive in Nile your people must start a revolution against Berlant. I want you to hide all the food you can, for when I come I want every man to do his duty to come to the front with me; so prepare secretly my orders. When the men must leave for the front the secret word will be 'We are.'"

Rowena remained unhappy after the message left for the Nile, he began planning how he could fight Berlant.

Many idea he got but he thought, if God does not help us we are lost.

But he had one resolution, that God would not abandon his people, he would be with them until triumph came.

Rowena ordered his men to be ready next morning to listen to a great speech, he wanted all to be present. Rowena worried of the trouble, mystery and danger which would confront him when he meet Berlant.

In the evening Rowena set on a big log by himself, with his head cupped in his hands and planned.

The same night God went to Ape and showed many signs. Rowena's father saw the sky and heard a voice say to him: "Tell Rowena to defend the people of Nile. Kill the witch

Berlant. If he does not, blood will be on the Ape.”

Then he saw another sign, Marana Rowena’s sweetheart. She dreamed God told her to tell Rowena to go into Nile and destroy Berlant. If he does not Berlant will be in Caiol when she finishes with the Nile and will destroy the children and people of Caiol as did to the other countries. At break of day his father looked for him as did Maranna. They met and asked each other where Rowena was, but of course neither knew. Some women told them where Rowena was and they went to him and found him with his head still in his hands sitting on a log. He had not moved the night long. When his father and Maranna told him what they had dreamed and seen, Rowena stood up in desperation and cried, “You know what you saw and I saw things, too. I saw things the whole night through. We must go to war to defend our women and children and this war will last long. I want you, Maranna, to unite all the women and work in the men’s place, for I shall need all the men. You women must provide the food for us, because we shall war from six to nine years.”

Meanwhile all the men of Ape crowded around their king and Rowena told them all, his eyes sending forth looks with fire in them.

Rowena was so nervous that he shivered in rage, he spoke to his men and said, “I want all my people present to listen to my orders.” In the meantime King Pata arrived. He asked Rowena the trouble. Rowena answered, “We shall have a dangerous war,” and explained all. “Brothers of Ape, we have a long war before us, dangerous, we are going to win, we must do in two points, die for the glory of God, and who remains to enjoy the peace with their families, or surrender as slaves to the witch Berlant. All her people will be

destroyed. I shall divide all you who are with me to obey the laws and the command of God. We shall fight Berlant to the end, we will get victory but it will take time, all who remain alive will enjoy the freedom in our own land. If we do not go, we are cowards, we must go for freedom of the people. If we do not go, we lose our blood, because Berlant will come here and the earth of Ape will be the grave of the people, the terror of women and children because the witch Berlant will be here to disturb our women, to destroy our people, she will do the same to us as to Caion and Aiel, and as is now doing it to the Nile, but we shall not let her come here, we will go after her. We shall kill her so as to keep Ape clean and clear of blood. We go to the Nile to defend their people, we go there to give freedom to our children and we shall return with the laurels of victory for our country. But, in case I lose, get killed or wounded, do not get frightened, because Iaco will represent me, will be your commander. All who come back must bring victory.”

The witch Berlant with her people were prepared with all her men to capture the Nile.

King Pata spoke to his people and said: “Sons of the Ape people, we are all sons of God, we should not be scared of this war, because God helps us, he defends his men in any danger. I am getting old, but I will come with you, and offer my last strength, with our hero Rowena.” Rowena thanked the old King Pata and said: “We are going to bring victory, for our children, sick, we risk our lives for humanity’s sake, and our celestial Father will help us, we all must be proud, and the women produce our food, and we will defend their honor, we shall be at war from six to nine years, so I leave to you, to your consideration, I shall force no one, no man to accompany me and risk his life. All who are willing follow

me, for we shall defend humanity. If no one comes I am going alone, I am willing to die and leave the people from Berlant's danger.

All the men of Ape, all shouted, "We are going to camp to defend the Nile, to clean our women and children from Berlant's danger."

Rowena then ordered all his men, from 18 to 30 years of age, who would go first, the older people to help the women. All young men as soon as they reached the age of 18 must leave for the trenches. "In case I need more men, I shall get those from 30 up."

But all the men from 16 to 50 armed themselves with canes and followed their king, to risk their life with him. Maranna was so occupied with the women, and Rowena ordered King Pata to remain there to prepare new troops. He ordered all his troops to follow him and walked ahead of them like a wild buffalo.

When they united in Caiol to his represented king he said: "Iaco, unite all your men and come with us to fight Berlant. Meet me at the Nile, because we must get there as soon as possible, to defend our people. If we do not, the witch Berlant will come in Caiol; we must go and meet her in her country, to get through with her so we can remain in peace." Rowena did not stop, as soon as he had given his orders he departed for the Nile. When Rowena arrived there, he saw the witch Berlant at the head of her troops. Rowena went to meet her and said: "Wild, damned witch, you are through with the Nile, I shall punish you as you deserve," and he struck her with his cane.

It happened at the moment that the witch Berlant was gifted with the power of translocation to magnetize, but Rowena went closer to her and shouted: "We shall see who

is the strong, your torch or my cane!” Rowena struck her again so hard he broke her shoulder and the handle of the torch fell. Berlant began to run away from him, but her blood came out from the shoulder, so her power was broken, she cannot magnetize the people any more. She went back to Cainon, wondering. In the meantime her troops tried to overcome Rowena with their torches but did not succeed. Rowena went about, swing his cane. His troops advanced. Rowena struck and knocked a man down, they did not have a chance to try and burn his face. His troops had by this time arrived and they began assaulting the enemy with their canes, with the great hero, they hammered Berlant’s troops and beat the enemy back. Rowena shouted to his men, “Courage, brother, courage, courage.” The line of the Cainon troops was broken and Rowena advanced, and little by little sent them back to their own land.

Night came, Rowena would not risk his men on that mystery land, so they stayed on the Nile, to be safe, but Berlant on her side, united all the men left in Cainon and sent them to the front.

Berlant’s troops were on the way, but when they met reserves, they reorganized and returned, giving Rowena an awful surprise. Rowena, with his men, had a hard fight for three days, without food. After three days the people of Nile sent a great quantity of food, so Rowena and his men were restored and they thanked God.

Five days after, the Cainon troops had now arrived, and they both started a great assault, Rowena’s army with canes and the enemy with torches. But the Cainon army were multiplied five times that of Rowena. Rowena advanced. After fifteen days, Iaco with all his Caiol troops, arrived, now started a desperate fight. The Cainon tried to hold Rowena

back, but it was impossible because the canes were terrible to fight with, and the torches were always dropped.

Slowly the Cainon army was diminished, the field was littered with their dead. Rowena forced them to retreat, and rested a few days.

With his troops Rowena advanced to Cainon, but he did not enter. He told his men to stop, that it was a mystery land. Berlant by this time had been recovered and waited for Rowena and his men to come to the mystery crote, so she could destroy them all, but Rowena did not go. He was wiser, so he enclosed his army, so they could not get out. Rowena occupied all the land Berlant used to keep all her slaves, but they were now at the front and the land was free, and in good form to be agricultured.

Rowena camped his headquarters under a pyramid, and his men worked the land. The land already had food planted and Rowena was provided with food.

When there was a combat in the 644 Rowena invented the cooking pot made out of clay, that they used to boil his meal with, and before that they used to use a roaster in the fire. Rowena made several articles out of terra cotta for his own use and invented the bread. They used to crush wheat out of stone to make flour, to have bread. This was all invention work made by Rowena.

The women of the Ape used to culture the land for the soldier's provision. The Caiol women all fishers, making a living out of the fish, and they used to dry a lot of them for the soldier's food.

Rowena and his troops used to work the land to provide all the provisions. Rowena used to pile all the protection when his enemy tried to advance. They used rock above the mountain to have them ready for his protection when the

enemy tried to advance. They used to roll the rock through the mountain, when he used to make a great massacre so that the people of the Cainon diminished every day, but everyone as well tried to break Rowena's line, but Rowena had victory all the time.

647 years after our first great father Adam, the people of the Cainon put up the greatest fire on the wood to destroy Rowena with his men, but God helped Rowena with the greatest rain. It rained five days and five nights straight and destroyed all the fire. Rowena built several water dams to hold the water for his protection, because under the firmament they had the greatest spring, so Rowena filled all these dams with water to have it ready when God commanded him to open.

The women from Caion and Aiel went over to Rowena to offer him their service for any occasion.

The Caion and Aiel generation started again from the Caion and Aiel women and Ape Caiol and Nail men 648. God ordered Rowena to open all the water to drown his enemy. Rowena opened up the water and made the greatest on the Cainon people and destroyed over half. The witch Berlant, when she saw all her people destroyed and all the caverns filled with water, she wept with her lust of desperation. She united all the women, children and men that were left, and tried to advance to Rowena's line, but Rowena captured Berlant and with his cane broke her neck, and grabbed her torch, and hollered to his people: "Brother, we have the victory; I killed the greatest enemy of God's people; we must pray to God and give thanks for the strength and power he gave our cane to win our enemy after seven years." After Rowena received the victory he gained the witch Berlant, he went with his men in Cainon,

but all the enemy were destroyed except women and child and several men, and the people were left starving and had nothing left to eat, but ate the bodies of all the people that were killed. When they saw Rowena with his men they though Rowena was going to kill them, but they kneeled down and cried, but Rowena felt sorry to see all the children starving and said: "Sister and Brother, I will save you out of starving; go in our trenches and you will find a lot of food; whatever you need is there, but I want everybody under God willing not to work maliciously under your Bailan." The people were scared but they obeyed Rowena and went to the trenches and they found a lot of food. Rowena went all the way through the Cainon destroyed all the attifuse that Berlant had built under her maliciousness. After Rowena destroyed that all, Rowena returned to these trenches and they found all the starving people from the Cainon all well recovered. When they saw Rowena, all united around and kneeled down and cried, "You are the God of the people, not the Bailan."

Rowena asked several women how long they had been without food, and they answered that they had been eating dead bodies for over three years, never had anything to eat from five to twelve days except mud and the roots of the trees. Rowena united the men to leave the trench and ordered each country who belonged to them. They had to go back from where they came from. The people from the Cainon, when they heard Rowena was leaving them alone, they started crying; the didn't want him to leave or take them with him, but he said, "I am willing to come sometimes to visit, but I cannot take you with me, because God says each generation of the people should be where they belonged." Rowena left a lot of food for his enemy, and they left the

return of the Ape; his father and his sweetheart. After he returned to his father's home, he married his sweetheart Marana, and then celebrated his marriage. He took a long trip around, the first stop he made on the people of Aiel, they were willingly pleased to see Rowena and to thank him for freedom which they had out of his cane. The people of Aiel for seven years never had any generation, but after they were free from Berlant they started to regain a generation. Rowena left Aiel to Caion and he found about 200 women. They had a black child. Rowena ordered all the black children with their mothers to leave the city and not be with the rest. He said the color should not be with the white, and the colored children's mothers went on south forth from Caion and reunited in the woods all by themselves, with their children, and they named their new land Afra, which is today called Africa.

The woman that had left Caion there was about two hundred with the colored child, and the other woman that had been working on the Rowena trenches was about three hundred; so they had about three hundred children of their own, that is how they re-started the generation of Cainon and Aiel.

Rowena stopped in Caion for several days. The women were well pleased to have him as their defender, but he left for Cainon. The Cainon people when they saw Rowena with his wife, received them with the greatest welcome, and said among themselves, "Here is our greatest God, he wants to save the people of the earth." They all crowded around and knelt down on their keens and said: "Oh greatest, greatest Rowena, you are the saviour of the Cainon people, for if it had not been for you we would have starved to death." Then Rowena said: "Whatever I did to give you food,

I did for humanity, but not to be your king; all that I ask in return is that you people be peaceful and not have war with other nations, and if you do not do as I say, I will be back and destroy the nation of Cainon.” But when he said this the whole population of Cainon said, “How can we deny your wish when you are God over us?”

Rowena was very much pleased to hear this from the Cainon people, because it proved to Rowena the faith the Cainon people had in him.

The following day Rowena left for Nile. When he arrived in Nile he was more than welcomed by the Nile people. He only stayed there for a couple of days and then left for Caiol. He stopped only a few days and then left for his home in Ape. He then remained in Ape with his people. About three weeks later his wife gave birth to a son, it was born with three veils around it, and each veil was a different color. Rowena was surprised to see this; he then picked up the child and lifted the child above his head and thanked God because he gave him a child. All of a sudden he saw several celestial signs.

Then all over the signs turned into a big green and blue cloud that covered the moon and stars and the air turned dark, and Rowena thought of the sign of celestia, that the child must become a great scientist or hero. He then returned in his house and told his wife what he had just seen. His wife was pleased to hear it and they named the child Iabol, and the next day he took the three veils and made a flag for his country.

Rowena called all his people on the vast East court and he said: “Brother, from now on we are going to have a flag about the Ape people, because God gave us this veil my child birth, so we must make a flag to remember my child

Iabol's birthday. The people were so glad and rushed in a crowd to see the child, and for several months everybody brought the best of present for Rowena's child. Rowena thanked his people for what they offered his child. Now we are going back to other nations and the law that they had and who used to command them and used to rule the people. Rowena was elected King and used to rule all the people of Ape. Rowena was kindly good to his people and his people gave him great respect and obeyed him good, and the people were married in the presence of the King Rowena and the law of marriage like was we have today one wife.

For their food they used to eat meat, fruits and mostly bread, they used to build clay cooking pots, never had any weight, they used a measure for everything, wheat potatoes, fruit, etc. They used to take a pumpkin and dry it and take the insides out and use that for measurement, and used to count one pumpkin, what we say today one peck, and from one to two, go to one hundred, to two hundred one by one. The meter measurement started with one finger, one hand, one cub, one leg, one cabin. Then it went no higher than one cabin.

They used to dress with animal skins, and the party dress was made out of so many skins of different colors. Maranna, Rowena's wife, invented the spinning wheel and used to weave wool and made all their clothes. That is the time they started to use the wool from the sheep and first started dressing in warm woolen clothes, and all the women were occupied with this work. Rowena ordered his people to raise more sheep to have a lot of wool for his clothes. 652 years after Adam, the Ape people started dressing with the woolen clothes. Maranna invented this work through the spider. One day she went over to the barn and saw the

spider make his nest, so she thought out of the sheep, they could make the clothes, so they started work with a stick and started a dress by hand. This invention brought a great impression on all the people in the world. The people from other nations went to Ape to learn to make clothes. Rowena and Marrana had three children, two boys and one girl. The first son Iabol, ten years old, started talking with God and became a great prophet. On the tenth birthday of Iabol, Rowena had a party for three years straight and on the thirteenth birthday of Iabol, Rowena had a great impression and in the meantime was playing with his wife Maranna, the child thought they were quarreling and he said: "Father, don't think you or anyone else can have a fight, I want peace and not fighting, I want all the people on earth to be peaceable and respect God's commandment, if they don't do that God will send a strong prophet and he will punish every person, who does not do his duty with his God and law." Rowena was surprised to hear the child thirteen years old to talk like an old man, and he asked the child how he knew, and he said that God revealed things to him every night and I am his representative. Rowena felt very proud and answered his son, "Peace amongst ourselves, all one people on Ape, but not with the rest, we will stick to our own because our own people are respectable people, and the Caiol because they respect me like my own people of Ape. The people from Nile that are far away from us but still have great respect, but I sympathize and want to have friendship and peace with the people of Cainon, Caion and Aiel and I haven't any use for them because they do not respect me. I don't have to look after them. It is thirteen years now after I saved them under the witch Berlant and tried to let me past with my troops on this country and Aiel, and Caion

people said that all the women never had been willing to come and thank me for what I did for all of them, so I figured what I did is all lost because they didn't appreciate it. King Rowena, since he killed the witch Berlant never went to see the people from the three countries, Aiel, Caion and Cainon, so he thought the farther he could keep away from them the better off he would be, that is why he wouldn't let his people mix with them like they did with the Caiol and Nile, because they are respectful people and respect their God and the law. When they come over to visit us with the greatest respect and when we visit them, they receive us with the greatest welcome. They are the people that have to be peaceful with us. The other three nations, Caion, Cainon and Aiel, all remain so scared since Rowena had the war with the Berlant, they don't even move from their own land and they don't disturb anymore. Each country is afraid of Rowena, and Cainon and Aiel, but they have nothing but women and a few children. The men were all killed by Berlant and some of the women tried to go to Caiol to get married, but the Caiol people had a law not to permit mixed marriages. But fourteen or fifteen men from Caiol deserted from their own country, and some of them went to Aiel and some to Caion and were married, and each one had sixteen to twenty-nine wives and the same had to work to support the men. In Cainon there were about eight or nine percent of the women and eleven percent men, and each man used to marry twelve to eighteen women to regenerate the population, and they used to make the laws by themselves, each man commanded by his own wife, and any time that they had quarrels they would be afraid of Rowena and they would cry and pray to Rowena not to destroy them. They thought that Rowena had a strong spirit to see what they were doing, that is why

they knelt down and cried for three days straight to be forgiven for quarreling.

The Cainon people used to make their living out of fish like the Caion and Aiel people who made theirs out of fruits and bread.

Iabol the little prophet was talking to God each night and what God told him, the people were surprised to hear such words in a thirteen year old boy. One night the main time Iabol was on the mountain top talking to his God the people saw him, and from the sky six stars with the length of a tail. A blue color came out of the stars, and three stars from the north part and three came on Cainon Sea. The people asked Iabol what the stars meant, so he explained to all his people that God assigned and revealed to him that he should visit all the people on the earth to have them peaceable with his father Rowena, but the other part of the people were suspicious and thought they would be destroyed, so they started to dig many dungeons so they could hide themselves from being destroyed. Rowena questioned his son all the time what God explained to him. God told Iabol to have his father accept the peace from other people, because people from Caion and Aiel there were suffering too much and they have no generation and no respect, so our loyalty, honor got pardon and peace with them; because there is nothing left but the women and God wants you to open immigration. Any men who are willing to go to Aiel and Caion we should not stop them, because so many children have no father to teach them respect and the faith their father had. So if some men are going there to teach all the children under God willing to command them, all the world is so scared of you they think you are going to destroy all of them, and how many men would like to immigrate but fear

to disobey his King, but Caion and Aiel women that have just as much privilege to have man and the generation that our own women, to Ape, that have just as much privilege under God's rule like we have. God doesn't want a woman to suffer. They must all consider they are all the son of God, so you the father over all, you the fairest of the people and you have to be the settlement of all troubles.

“The women of Caion had started a new race, and you have so many men, and are so angry with them to not give them any help, to these women. God gave you the strength and power to kill the witch Berlant, so as to not let her destroy the generation of Caion, Aiel and Nile, Caion is the third generation now it will be destroyed, but God wants you to not to let the Caion generation end. He wants you to give free, willing to any from the other country who are under your rule. Open to immigration, to send the free men to help the women, they must be free. So God will be pleased.”

Rowena with the other men were surprised hear Iabol's great speech, his first child, thirteen years old, who had an old person's mind.

Rowena said to his son, “My dearest child, you are my first son. God retreat me with a prophet son, and I do everything that you say, for God Father's sake and your beloved respect.”

Iabol talked to his father and said, “Father you will pardon me for a while, I am going to leave, because I must obey God. I want for God's sake to have the greatest peace with the other countries, so we get peace and courage.”

The prophet Iabol departed alone to go into Aiel, Caion, and Cainon. The first stop he made in Aiel, and he invited all the women to go to Rowena to receive his peace. Because

God wanted peace, and all the women of Aiel were willing. Iabol ordered the women, that when they saw six comets above Ape, to depart for Ape, he would be there. Iabol went to Caion, and made a great speech to the women, saying, "Women of Caion, you are alone, God sent me here to invite you to peace. I am King Rowena's son, the man who killed the witch Berlant, to free you from all her maliciousness, why not go to peace and thank Rowena for your freedom, but you will regret it if you do not go and stay with. God will send to the earth the greatest prophet, he will punish these who have no faith in God. This prophet will be so strong in God's power, he will make you shiver if you are without peace."

All the Caion women started to cry and asked Iabol if Rowena would accept their visit, if he will pardon them for what their men did commit. Iabol said, "Go to King Rowena, in the name of God and his son willing will represent your father. He will pardon any mistake, be ready when you see the six comets above Ape, depart for Rowena, I will be there. And I will make peace, so that you can start a new generation."

The women of Caion and Aiel united, about one hundred on the committee, to obey Iabol's orders, so as to be ready when they saw the comets.

Iabol departed for Cainon. The women of the countries elected a committee, the leader of the Caion women was very intellectual, whose name was Becca, she said to the women, "We get what we can off of our country for peace, we prepare some money, sheep, lamb, calf, chicken, and other foods, to bring all to Rowena. Let me talk alone and you all do the same movements that I do, so we shall be accepted in good willing." The women of Aiel had about 30 women, whose

leader's name was Raza, she had taught her committee the same as the Caion leader had and prepared what they could for Rowena. All now waited to see the six comets, and waited for Becca so that they could go together, and they were sure they would have peace with King Rowena.

When Iabol arrived in Cainon he said, "This is the mystery land, there must be mysterious people." But he had a great surprise to see how the people acted with him. When the people of Cainon saw Iabol, he was dressed in wool clothes, the Cainon people have never seen such clothes before and they became frightened and ran away from him, calling for Rowena for help, because they thought Rowena was God. When Iabol saw that he people were afraid of him, and called to his father for help, said, "Hold on, I want to talk to you. Why are you afraid of my presence, and you call my father for help? I am King Rowena's son, I will not harm you. Listen, do not be afraid." The people calmed down and crowded around him. They knelt and kissed Iabol's feet, but he said, "I want you to look above, not in the ground, if you look above you will see God, if you look down you will look on evil, temptations, of your Bailan."

The people, frightened by Iabol, all stood and looked above. So Iabol made a great speech, he said, "People of Cainon, you are afraid of my father, but you should not be because, if my father wanted to harm you, he would not have come here to free you from the witch Berlant. My father warred here for seven years, and killed Berlant, for the freedom of the world, and you are all free from her torch, you will not be punished by fire any more. My father with his courage and help of God, gave you freedom, go to him and find peace; you suspect him to harm you; if he had any wrong against you people, he would not have fed you with

his food when you were starving. When he went to war, he gave you food for over three years. He did not come back and bother you, and you did not go to thank him, for the help he gave you. I want you to go to my father Rowena, and make peace with the other countries, because it is needed.

“Soon God will send to the earth the prophet of terror, and he will punish all those who do not have faith in God, and that do not keep peace. He shall destroy you with his celestial power. Do not wait too long.”

On the great prophet’s speech the people had great remorse, a great terror assailed them. They said, “We are willing to go to our god, Rowena, to thank him for his help, but we do not know how; give us courage, and tell us what to do. You are a god above us, for fourteen years we have wanted to see Rowena, to congratulate him, we do not know where he abides, but we are willing to come and do whatever you wish.”

Iabol then answered, “Rowena is not your God, he is not your king, he is your defender, he left you alone, to rule your country as you wish, you should not bother the other countries.”

The people of Cainon all wanted to go with Iabol to see King Rowena, but Iabol said, “It is not necessary, organize a committee, under a commander to represent your country. Elect a leader and come to Ape.”

The Cainon people obeyed him and elected a committee of thirty men, and brought gifts to give to Rowena. They picked out the best, took all the corals of different colors for his wife and went with Iabol.

Iabol departed to Nile. When he arrived the people went against him, to not let him pass, but Iabol said, “I am King Rowena’s son, I must pass. I invite you all to listen to my

message that will bring great peace. I am the prophet Iabol, I shall be the god of peace. I am want all the countries to come to the Ape, to receive peace, so that every country will have peace. I want no disturbance on earth, we must respect each other. If we do not I shall call my Celestial Father, he shall destroy all that disobey my orders.”

When the Nile people heard that he was the son of Rowena, they knelt down and begged their pardon. They picked a committee of fifty men and followed Iabol and depart for Caiol.

When the people of Caiol saw Iabol, they gave him a great welcome. He was met by a coach carried by eight men, that had been given to him by the Niles, so as not to let him walk. Iabol invited the Caiols to go to Ape to accept peace with other countries, so the representative king of Caiol, Iaco, obeyed, and took forty men to send to the Ape, and told Iabol to stay a few days.

In the meantime six comets showed above Ape so that the women of Aiel and Caion would see them.

In Caiol the young women put garlands of flowers above his head. When Iabol departed form Caiol with the representative King Iaco and his followers of Nile and Cainon, when they reached the main road, they met the women and so united to go and make peace with Rowena.

Iabol was the head of all carried in his coach. When Rowena saw his son Iabol with the representatives of five countries, he united his people and went to meet his son, with a flag made from his son’s veil with which he was born, and received him with great joy and a reception. Rowena said, “Here is my son, accompanied with the rulers of five countries, they are all pleased to go with him, you represent to them a God on earth, you have earned great respect from

all the people of five countries, you are the king of peace, you are the saviour of the people, I your father, shall do whatever you wish. With all the countries we shall have great peace, in the gospel of God, and the presence of all, I hope that peace shall remain forever. I am glad to receive you all, we represent six countries, all under our prophet Iabol, ruler.”

When the prophet saw that his father was prepared to die, he did not say anything, but covered his pain for the sake of peace, when it was completed he gave a speech and said: “Brothers and sisters, today we celebrate the great peace and opening of commerce to six countries. We shall celebrate to the help of God and to my son Iabol. I built this monument to remember that I want you to keep peace, and to respect God and each other, to not disturb other countries.”

After he finished his speech he raised his head, looked above and said, “O God, you are the only Father of the people, you helped me in danger, you kept me safe, you gave me strength to free the people, you give me a great son, a prophet you help my son to unite the people to come to me; how can I thank you for all you have done? I shall recompense you with my death. My death will represent the seal of this statue, to make the people remember to keep peace; I leave all in peace and I want you to give my son power so that he may keep the world in peace. Because you are the only Father, the only God, you only to help my child and the others.” At the same time Rowena felt he was going to die. He turned to the others and said, “Brothers, I leave all in peace, with my son Iabol, I die in the presence of all.”

Rowena held on to his son, his strength was gone, pulled his son to his heart and said, “Pray for me, my son, I cannot be your father any more,” and he died in his son’s arms.

This is the end of the tale of the great hero Rowena, the

man who killed the witch Berlant, who freed the world, who made peace with six nations.

Six hundred sixty years after our first father Adam. After the death of Rowena, God had sent two columns to be put above his body. So many columns were put on the arch. Iabol prayed for his father's soul, he said, "O Celestial Father, you gave me the power to unite all the people to make peace before my father, now he is dead. All I want is that I want to know what to do with my father's body." All at once it became dark, and Iabol heard God's voice say, "Iabol, Iabol, your father's body must be buried, because it belongs to the earth. Bury his body and you shall become guardian of the people that are on earth. If any should disobey I shall destroy them with an earthquake and a storm." When the populace had heard the voice of God for the first time they were surprised and they all resolved to obey Iabol.

The people of Ape were quite in the dark after the death of Rowena. And the people of other countries were afraid to go back to their won lands, so the prophet Iabol had to accompany them. He gave them courage. The first stop he made at Caiol, and Nile, remained there and rested, then they went to Aiel, and to Caion, and thence to Cainon. The people were now in their own lands but still they were afraid to stay in their own country, so Iabol stayed in Cainon for a time. One day Iabol left Cainon to go to Nile, but the people followed him crying that they were afraid without him, so he turned back and tried to give them courage but it was impossible. At the same time the women of Caion came to Cainon saying that they were afraid to stay on their own land without Iabol. Iabol did not know what to do, he could not be at the two places at one time. He could not convince them that there was nothing to be afraid of. He brought the

women back to Caion and the people of Cainon followed him. He went back to Cainon and one night while the people were asleep he left for Ape.

Next morning the people of Cainon saw he was missing and searched for him, they went all over Cainon and even Caion. They united with the women of Caion and went to Nile to look for him. When they found he was not in Nile they cried. The Aiel women united with the other two and went to Ape. When they arrived, Iabol had already been there ten days, and they found him talking to the people of Ape, telling them how the sins had frightened the people of other countries. Iabol at this time saw the people coming, crying that they were afraid, that they would not be without him. They crowded about him and cried, "O Father, O God of the people the evil is after us, we are afraid we cannot stay without you. We saw spirits on earth that tried to kill us." Iabol said, "If you have faith in God, and respect him, the evil spirits will not bother you. Clear your souls, clean them, and the evil spirits will not prevail."

The populace all wanted to stay in Ape, but Iabol did not want a mixture of blood, so he called to God and asked him what to do.

God answered, "Iabol, Iabol, I do not want sinners to be with your people; if you let them stay you spoil your own country. Take twenty-one of your youngest men, to bring the sinners back to their own land. Leave seven men in each country, renew them every year, until they have become used to staying in their own land. It is their own fault, remorse of their soul, the blood, innocence they have all been revenged, they must stay on their own land, where they sinned, that is covered with blood."

The prophet Iabol obeyed God, he sent the people back

and put them where they belonged, and left seven young men in each country, to teach the people right, and to see how they got along. When Iabol replaced the people of Caion he departed for the Nile. When he arrived in Nile unexpectedly, the people crowded around him and said, "Our father, our king, our lord, is back with us." The people were peaceful and the prophet Iabol remained for three months, after which time he returned to Ape to his own people. The Nile did not want him to go and he said, "Brothers of Nile, I cannot stay here all the time, I must go to another country, because I must please all. I am in a hurry to return to Ape, I will be back as soon as God is willing." He did know what to do, they all wanted him to stay, so to please them all he decided to remain in each country three months, to obey God and please the people. When Iabol was living no one wanted to be king, only Ape had a ruler, the brother of Iabol, Caesar. They wanted Iabol to be their king, but he said, "We are in peace now, under the command of God, I cannot be your king, I must please everyone." All the people were under his control, no one tried to be the leader. No one tried to steal from others, they all worked for themselves. When they met strangers, they shook their hands, kissed the earth, thanked God, and called them brothers. They all respected Iabol's command, and the earth produced many crops.

Iabol would teach the people to be careful because God would put another prophet on earth and this prophet would be the greatest man with celestial power, he would destroy the sinners, murderers and thieves. "Beware if he does not find you in peace, for he shall have the world in his control, he shall punish any one who has no faith in God, with great severity. But he will also help the good, help you in any

danger. I am only a prophet to explain, but he shall be a prophet with strength and great power.”

The population of six countries, were very obedient to the prophet and listened to him, and prayed God to let them remain in peace, so they would not be destroyed by the great prophet that was to come.

Iabol had not married, he said his heart belonged to God, not to a woman; he respected the women as his own sisters, the men like his brothers, he treated all alike, he traveled alone, three months in one country and three months in each of the others. He said the people were all the same, they all had privilege of seeing him, of hearing him, they were all sons of God, all his brothers, he taught them to keep close to God, and God would repay them, give them good crops, they would have no war, no earthquakes, no floods.

Iabol died at the age of 101 years, he left the people in peace, but the people were in the dark, and in sadness. They tried to rule themselves, but they could not, so they began to change.

All that Iabol had done, he turned the people under God’s gospel, he stopped all the wars, he stopped all killing and thieving, he stopped them from disturbing the women, he made them understand the meaning of respect and duty, and showed them how it would benefit them to be good, and not bad. About six months after his death there was a great change in the world, everyone tried to rule, everyone tried to command each other.

All the changes that happened after Iabol’s death:

1. Ape — Elected a king and everyone voted for Davin. The majority voted for him. Davin was the son of King Caesar, the nephew of the prophet Iabol. He was elected

to rule Ape, to keep the law. He was elected king in 754. Davin respected his people and realized the duty owed to God.

2. Caiol—Elected a king as to luck. They chose the smartest and intelligent men, planted a stick in the ground, and the one who would throw a stone nearest to the stick would become king. They threw the stone, and the winner commanded the people for three years, after which time they would elect another. The first winner was a young man of Ape blood, of about 27 years old whose name was Abbo; he was winner twenty-seven times. They all cheered for him shouting, “Abbo is our king!” Abbo was also the nephew of the prophet Iabol. He was the first king of Caiol. He would rule the people and teach them to respect God. He also was elected in 754. After his three years were up he again won, and the people said he must be from God, so they him remain their king.

3. Nile—In Nile the strongest man became king. They wrestled and the winner was king, and ruled Nile for one year. The winner was Monzo, a young man of about 26 years; he won from 72 men. This was in 755, and every year he won for twenty years, so the people decided to have him remain their king. Monzo kept his people in peace. He made them respect and obey God and the law, he kept them all in peace.

4. Cainon—In Cainon they again began their magnetism stuff. The one who could magnetize the most would become king. The first winner was Halaf. He was a cruel man, he was spiritualistic and witchery, so he became king of Cainon. In 755 he was elected. His maliciousness increased and the people forgot God and Iabol, their god was king Halaf.

5. Caion — In Caion the man who had the longest beard was elected king, and all the men who had beards organized and measured their beards; the one who had the longest would be king for one year, and would also represent the lodge. The first winner was Habey, he was king in 756. They thought God wanted the bearded men to be king, and all those who had no beards had to work as slaves. This lasted for a long time.

6. Aiel — In Aiel the women organized a lodge and they said God gave them power to rule Aiel; the greatest talker would be queen, and the winner was Molly. She ruled the people of Aiel in 756, and she made a law that the men should work for the women. The most of the men did not marry because they said they were no good, because they wanted to rule the men.

A phenomenon showed in the sky for three months, in the year 760. They saw many clouds of different colors that would change from red to black. Five months after in Aiel and Caion there were many earthquakes that killed many people and otherwise damaged. In Cainon there were insects, grasshoppers and caterpillars who destroyed all their food, and the people had to eat fish.

Even after this disaster the people would not have faith in God, they believed only in King Halaf. In 763 King Monzo married King Halaf's daughter and it united the Cainon and Nile to respect each other.

In 797 the Nile broke their alliance with Caiol and joined in with Cainon, and they also became like the people of Cainon, they became one. Both denied the word of God and Iabol.

In 799 King Halaf of the Cainon gave the command to his

son Ramad. Ramad was stronger than his father, he began to increase the malifica of the Cainon land. King Ramad had built a temple to the memory of Itol, the king and his people respected the spirits of Itol, the giant Trampol and Berlant. The people were under his influence and he taught that Itol was a god, a spirit of earth, and he also taught them to worship him and Berlant.

In this time the ghosts and spirits under the influence of Ramad walked around Cainon like as if they were not dead.

In 803 the people of Afra, now Africa, started trouble with Caion; they sent men there to steal the women. The women of Caion went with them, they had nothing else to do, and the Caion men went after them. God sent a storm to stop the blending of colors. In the meantime the men of Caion had reached them and they had a war, but the men of Caion won, and the women went back to their own land, and there was peace until 821. In 821 Cainon started a war with Caion and took many women, and brought them to Cainon to increase the population, and made a law that any man could marry four women. In 822 the men of Caion went to Aiel and captured 300 women and brought them to Caion to raise children, and made a rule that any man could marry five women.

In 833 the Men of Nile went to Caiol to get women to increase their population, but they defended themselves and saved the women. In the meantime King Ramad of Cainon sent men to help those of the Nile. He reached them with a great quantity of men, and told King Abbo of Caiol, "King Abbo, I am King Ramad of Cainon. I want from you 500 young women, or I shall destroy all the people of Caiol." But Caiol was protected by the people of Ape. King Davin of Ape went to meet the giant Ramad, and he said to him, "You

beast, you think you play with the people of Caion, you are playing now with a man from God.” Davin and Abbo with their men fought with the others and with their canes and beat their enemy so badly that their enemy retreated with a great loss.

In 847 a great famine came to Nile and Cainon together with a disease and many people died. King Ramad had about 400 men and women in this circle and they went to Aiel and Caion to rob all they needed, and the people were afraid so they did not say anything.

In 848 Caion and Aiel were ruled by the Bailan.

In 849 the daughter of King Ramad gave birth to three children, two boys and one girl. One of the boys had two horns and three red teeth, and Ramad took care of him like a diamond. He took the child to the temple of Itol and Berlant, lay him on the ground offered him to Cailan, and named him Trampol. He taught him all the arts of maliciousness, of Bailan, as he had to Cainon.

The little Trampol grew into a big giant and the people of Cainon were afraid of him; he was very intelligent and developed a great power. Ramad had great faith in him and promised Trampol that he would make him king of Cainon, so he could rule the people.

In 850 in Ape a mare gave birth to three animals that looked like lions and they thought it was a phenomenon, and the scientists of Ape said that God was going to punish the sinners.

The year 853 in Caiol saw a woman give birth to two. Their bodies were like that of a human being but their heads were that of a goat. This the people also said was a phenomenon, but they died soon after birth. The Caiols suspected that there was going to be some disaster. They all

prayed to God for the freedom of their children.

In Nile there was an earthquake that left much damage, done to their buildings.

In year 855 Caiol separated from Ape and joined league with Nile.

In 856 the five countries, Caiol, Aiel, Caion, Nile and Cainon joined together; they forgot God, and were under the rule of Bailan.

In 863 these countries had much disaster happen to them. In Caiol it rained blood for forty-eight hours. It was very thick and burned all the crops and fruit, and the people had to eat fish again. In Aiel there was a very disastrous earthquake. In Caion there was a flood, and in Cainon and Nile there developed a great disease, the yellow fever, and many people died. Thus the countries were severely punished.

In Afra the population multiplied. In Ape all was calm and peaceful and they thanked God for it.

In 888, found that there had developed quite a bit of thievery and the five countries fought a civil war. After the civil war there was a famine for two years and many died of starvation. But still the people would not heed the signs. God did not give them peace and He did not let the land produce food. These people thought of Bailan, their god.

In Ape where the people respected God and obeyed the law, the king spoke to them every day telling them to keep it up, this pace. The year 888 we find that Ape had more populace than the five countries combined, because of the deaths in the other lands. And the people thanked God for the production of their lands. They built two large temples and renamed them "The House of God" and "The Refuge of Peace." Every week Davin preached in the House

of God. One day they heard the Divine voice say, "Love your Celestial Father, I shall recompense you with great prosperity. Stay away from Bailan and sin, remain in peace with your families. Do not disturb the others, do not kill, do not steal. Keep your land clean, we want no sinners; if I find sinners in Ape I shall punish you like all the others. Do not let sinners walk on your land so that it will not infect you." The people obeyed Him, and kept faith in Him. They regarded the divine word. The Ape king domesticated some animals to protect them against the other countries and put lions and bears on the borders, so that others would not walk on Ape land.

In the year 893 there was in the sky, for two months, five red clouds, and in Egypt it did not rain for two years, the springs went dry and the people had to drink sea water, and many starved to death. When the people heard that in Ape there was no suffering, they immediately wanted to go there to live, so they sent some men to find a good place, but the lions were angry and they were afraid to enter, so they went back and said that the people had turned themselves into lions, but the king ordered them to try again. When they reached the Ape territory there descended a great storm and they returned again. When they arrived in Cainon they reported what had happened to their king. Trampol said, "The spirit of Ape must be stronger than that of Cainon," and he decided not to risk his men any more.

In Caion there was still the same law. The men with the longest beard was king. In Aiel the women still ruled.

The year 895 God punished Caion and Aiel with a heavy storm of hail and there was much damage, he also sent a disease.

In 899 it again rained blood in Caiol. In 901 there was

a little change. The Caiols signed peace with Ape, and the people of Ape formed their own opinions, it started sort of a political war. In 902 God punished the six countries with a famine, the flood diminished. The wheat had at that time had 366 blossoms, but after seven years there were only 200. One hundred sixty-six blossoms were burned from the dry weather.

The production of potatoes used to be 85 potatoes from one seed and it remained only 52. Thirty-three were burned and potatoes were very small. The pumpkin had 47 from each seed and only 28 remained. Because of this seed diminishing the people had to work more land to raise enough food. The famine was punishment for God Father.

A Celestial sign and earth phenomenon.

In Caiol a woman gave birth to a child with two heads and the body like a fish. Above the sea in Caion three clouds of red showed. In Afra there was a fire and many were burned. In Caion for two days and two nights it rained snowballs and destroyed the crop and fruit and again the people had to eat fish.

In Caion, Cainon, and Nile there were very man thieves who stole from whomever they met. They camped under the pyramids and most of the raids took place in Nile. They stole food and captured women and brought them to their camps.

The year 903 the daughter of Ramad gave birth to three children, two daughters and a son, and the son had two horns and three red teeth like that of her other son Trampol. On this day her first son died and in his honor they named the second son Trampol also. Hasa, the mother of Trampol was 66 years when she gave birth to these children. King Ramad took little Trampol to the temple and prayed to

Bailan to make him stronger than his brother.

When he grew it was true, he was stronger and fiercer than his brother.

In 903-906 in all the isles of Egypt there were comets that threw fire, and King Ramad said that the fire was for the torch of Trampol. In 905 Ramad started war with Caion. Nile and Aiel went to help Caion, so Ramad had to retreat.

In the year 909 a woman of Caiol gave birth to seven children, two sons and five daughters. In Caion it rained blood, in Ape it rained ashes and the clouds were red as fire. In 910 the sky showed three comets and the people became frightened and said God was going to destroy the people.

The year 911 there was an earthquake in Afra and they suffered great damage, and there was cast upon them a dreaded disease. For seven years the food was scarce and the people ate fish, the grained diminished greatly, still the people forgot God, and He punished them because they were willing to deny God and keep Bailan.

In the year 917 in Caion a hen lay an egg, and when it hatched they saw a turkey. In Ape a dog barked continually every night from 12 to 2 A.M. He told the people that God would soon send a master who would punish the people for forgetting the name of God.

The people of Ape told the king of the dog, and the king took the dog to his court to make him explain, but for three months the dog said the same thing. When he was asked a question he only barked.

In Caiol a goat gave birth to three lambs and the populace had a good crop for three years but it was not as great as it had formerly been. It was their punishment from God.

The year 928, in Caiol a woman gave birth to four children, three sons and a daughter. In 929 Caiol began war

with Ape but they had to retreat. In the same year Caion began a war with Aiel, and the Cainon warred with Caion and Nile sided with Caion, and the Cainon had to defend themselves from two countries, but the giant Trampol, really defended them all and burned their faces with his torch and carried the Cainons to victory, and he ordered Caion and Nile to pay tribute to him every year, but Caiol helped Aiel and Cainon helped the Nile, still Trampol did not fear them. He turned his enemies with his torch. The war lasted long and Trampol was victory of the four countries and now they were all to pay tribute to him. God sent a heavy storm to Trampol's army and he became frightened and went back to his land and hid himself in his crote, giving the other countries a chance to revive. The people of Ape were keeping themselves neutral they were suspecting harm from the dog said and they restored their faith in God, and the king went to the House of God every day to pray for the freedom of the children.

In 933, the countries were peaceful for a time and the sky showed signs. In the same year a dog in Nile gave birth to three puppies each with two heads, and in Caion a mare gave birth to two camels, so the generation of camels began in 933. In Aiel a woman gave birth to four sons. In Caiol a mare gave birth to four, one had two heads and three legs.

In 934 four comets were seen above the mountains of Ape, and they transformed into fire, after which it was dark for 22 days and it rained for 37 days and 37 nights. The year 937 a woman in Ape gave birth to a child with a body of a human and the head of a rooster and the scientists took it as a sign. In 938 they saw above Ape a head of a man with a beard who shouted from 1-3 A.M., "I shall command the earth," for nine months.

On the third day of June 939 the head disappeared and the people became frightened. A child of two years began singing to himself, "There shall be a great prophet as Iabol said, and we already have heard his word." The people remembered the words of Iabol and waited with great enthusiasm, and prayed to God to not delay the coming of the prophet.

On the ninth day of June 939 the woman who had given birth to the child with the head of a rooster gave birth to a child with a beard. When she saw the child with a beard she cried, "God makes me give birth to phenomenons only." But her husband told her not to cry he would go to the king to see if he would buy his child. The child's mother whose name was Rosata and the father Ato. The child moved his head.

Ato departed to see the king, (he had only one arm). Rosata lived in poverty because her husband did not work, she was alone 33 hours, with the exception of her child, and she began crying because of her poverty and she said, "O God you give me bright children but how can I support them?" The child said three times Ha, ha, ha. The mother's crying increased and she said, "You lovely child see the misery we are living in, your father does not work, you suffer with your mother, you should have been born to some mother would could give you what you need." The child's crying increased.

Ato, the child's father, went to see the king regarding the sale of his child. He told the king that it was the second time that a phenomena had been born to his wife in two years. The first son had been born with the head of a rooster, the present son had a long beard, and he asked what price he would give for his son.

The king said, "Ato, I will come to your house and decide the worth of your child." When they arrived they heard Rosata crying to her child, "My dearest child, this is the present your mother gives to you. I give you your first bath with my tears."

The king said to her, "Courage, Rosata, I shall buy your son and provide you with food to last you fifteen years."

Rosata refused saying the child was not for sale. But Ato said, "It is better that you sell the child. Then we need not worry where our next meal is coming from." She still would not give the child up, and she and her husband argued until he beat her with his cane. When the child saw his mother was being beaten he grunted three times and began to cry.

All at once the little hut was illuminated with a powerful light and they heard a voice say, "Rosata, Rosata, do not sell your child. He is my prophet. You shall be provided for. The king and others will try to take your son away, but I am here to protect him. Your husband shall remember the beating he gave you, for in ten years his punishment will be due. If anyone shall try to harm my prophet I shall destroy him with my celestial power. The child must stay with his mother. Rosata, Rosata, take good care of your child and name him Miel. Remember that I am here to defend my prophet."

The people soon found out about this incident and they visited the mother and her child, bringing food and cattle. The king built a house for them, and for nine years the people of the five countries visited them to see their prophet, always bring food. Ato, the child's father, went around the houses and told the people that if they did not give him food and drink he would punish them. The people being afraid of him gave, and he went home in drunkenness every night and

beat his wife.

At the age of seven years Miel began preaching to the people. They crowded around him and heard what he said: to obey and respect God; to be close to him and He would not fail them; to remain in peace, for such was the will of God.

On June 9, nine hundred forty-nine years after Adam, when Miel celebrated his tenth birthday, his mother gave birth to another child, a son; the father being away, Miel had to attend to his mother. HE took his little brother, looked in the heavens and said, "O God, the celestial Father. Here you see in my arms, my brother. Tell me what I shall do with him."

Then he heard the Divine Voice say, "Miel, Miel, take good care of your brother. You represent his father. Your brother shall come to be a prophet, and name him Giacovino. Protect him so that no one shall harm him."

Miel then went in, locked the door, sat beside his mother and told her what God had said to him. His mother did not want him to harm his father because she entreated him that he had only one arm. But Miel said, "It is his fault that he has only one arm. He cut his arm off so that he would have to work." A rap was heard at the door. He opened it and saw his father standing there drunk. He told him to go away but Ato raised his cane to strike Miel. Miel lifted his left foot and tapped the earth with it and immediately the earth swallowed Ato, leaving only his head to be seen. Miel went in and told his mother but she did not believe him, thinking he was only joking.

The next day when visitors came to the house they saw Ato in his predicament and tried to pull him out, but he was imbedded too deeply in the earth. They went inside and told

Rosata and she called Miel, who was sleeping, and asked him what he had done to his father. Miel said, "God punished him," and he fell asleep again.

When the king heard the news he went to the house and told Miel to save his father, and Miel told him, "No, it is better for him where he is; he cannot get drunk any more and he cannot beat my mother."

The king saw that it was no use to argue she he went in and talked with Rosata. She began to cry and Miel came and comforted her, telling her that he would take good care of her Giacovino. That the will of God should not be disobeyed.

The little prophet tended the sheep and goats that he people had given to his mother. He would go into the forests with his little brother and there were ferocious animals, but they did not harm him. He nursed his baby brother with sheep and goat milk and when Rosata felt better she accompanied her sons.

Miel told his mother that God had given him a message. That when Giacovino grew up they were to travel around the world to teach people to obey God; so that they would be free from their sins. God would advise him when the time came.

In was nine hundred sixty-two years after Adam, on his twenty-third birthday, when Miel was preaching to the people that he heard the voice of God say, "Miel, Miel, today you celebrate your twenty-third birthday and it is My will that you leave to travel to the other countries on your mission. I shall give you the power to do what you wish, and you shall be under my command. In Caiol you shall find another prophet and he shall come with you. Then go to the fishermen's section in Caiol; there you shall see them

whipping a man whose name is Aldoman. Take him with you, and there will be three of you prophets.”

At this time there were only five countries, namely, Caiol, Nile, Cainon, Caion and Aiel, which worshipped Bailan. The Cainons had developed into a very strong country and they had power over the other four countries and had taught them to forget God.

When Miel received the order to leave he was happy. He went and bade his mother good-bye and then he went to see the king and he said to him, “Take good care of my mother until I return.” He turned to his brother and said, “Come, Giacovino, we must go for such is the will of God. We must travel and we must suffer for the freedom of the people.” They departed from Ape to serve the command of God the Father. Both brothers departed for traveling around the world to serve the wish of God.

The first impression of the prophet Miel was when he was in the forest, between Ape and Caiol many lions followed him to offer him help. Miel thanked God for His help. When Miel and Giacovino were in Caiol they didn't stop. They went straight to the fishermen's camp to meet Aldoman. How god indicated to him when Miel arrived there: he saw two big men who were whipping the young prophet Aldoman and all the rest of the people were laughing at the punishment of the young prophet.

“Huh, huh,” said Miel when he saw the young prophet being punished by cruel fishermen. He grabbed the fisherman with one hand on his shoulder and the other on his head, twisted him so hard that he broke his neck and pulled his head right out. He threw him to the rest of the fishermen who were left and said, “Here, I'll teach you to whip young prophets from God.” The prophet under God's

faith should not be brutally whipped and he called Aldoman by name and said, “Come with me, brother. We are going to serve God the Father, command, and He will protect us from dangerous people.”

In the meantime the fishermen tried to beat Miel, but he commanded the earth and it started to tremor like an earthquake. So all the fishermen fell and rolled themselves on the ground and hollered for help. Aldoman kneeled down at Miel’s feet to thank him for helping him against the fishermen. But Miel took him by the shoulders and said, “I don’t want you to look at the ground. You must look above in the sky so you can see our Celestial Father. When we look above we look to God our Father; He is only a guardian against dangerous people. If we look on the ground we are looking to the Bailan of Cainon. Bailan is the greatest enemy of God the Father.”

Aldmon obeyed Miel. He stood up and quivered with fear. He didn’t what they had to do. Miel said, “Do not worry. I will teach you how to represent God and His commandments.”

The fishermen were rolling on the ground and calling for help; praying to Miel to stop the earth’s tremor. All crowded around him, their faces down, kneeling and kissing the ground under Miel’s feet and praying to him to stop the earthquake. Miel was sorry for them and raised his eyes to the sky and raised his right hand and calmed the earth. Miel hollered to them, “You people, breed of a wolf blood in the earth, tried to beat the youngest boy with the cruelty of two big men. You tried to be smart with a boy without a father, but our God sent help to the good, innocent child. I came just in time for defending Aldoman. Aldoman is a prophet who belongs under God’s commandment. And remember,

any time the people try abuse against a prophet of God, the earth will destroy the prophet's enemy; because all the innocent belong to God the Father. We are prophets to obey God and defend all the innocent children and women. I will punish all yours with the greatest terror."

But the fishermen saw the great power of the prophet Miel and were talking amongst themselves, saying, "Who is the young stranger who has all this power?" They never moved from the ground; just lay there and shuddered with fear and asked Miel for pardon and for what they had done. They promised not do that any more. They said they were willing to do anything that Miel desired them to do. But Miel did not answer them but turned to Aldoman and said, "Follow me, brother. Do not pay any attention to the fishermen. I came here for your sake and in God's name because we are three prophets. We have to travel around the world and obey God's commandment: to teach the people their duty. We three must be together. We must risk ourselves and must suffer great sacrifices for the sake of God the Father, and to teach all the people under God's command."

Then Miel turned to the fishermen and said to them, "Remember, I want all of you under God's command; beware if you disobey God's wishes. If you do fail my word I will be back soon and destroy all of you, and the earth under your feet; because the earth belongs to God, not to the people. I am the prophet Miel from Ape. The same child you came over to visit when I was small with my mother Rosata. I remember and respect your visit. Now I am growing and I came over to return your visit and to teach you that God is the commander. I want all of you to have faith in God; not to kill or steal; not to disturb the peace of other people."

When the fishermen heard he was the prophet Miel they were surprised to be with him and all hollered, "Hail the great prophet. You are the God of the earth. You are the father of the people. We didn't know you before. We abused you when first you came because we did not know who you were, and didn't know that Aldoman was a prophet, or that we had the greatest prophet in our camp and called him the Son of the Water." All knelt down to Aldoman and said to him, "Forgive us for the cruelty we did to you. We did not know you were a prophet."

Then Miel asked the fishermen why they called him the Son of the Water and they said because they found him tied to a large log when he was a child and didn't know who he was or where he came from. So they turned to Aldoman again and said, "Oh, you great child, forgives us for not respecting you, but from now on we will have the greatest respect for you three prophets."

The three prophets united, went out of the forest. All three promised to serve God the Father and to travel the world and teach the people. At that time there were five countries of Egypt; they had forgotten God and every person was under the Bailan faith and all they had to do for pleasure was to kill and steal and disturb each other. In Caiol, there were three parties. One was with God the commander; one with the Bailan of Cainon, and the third didn't believe in either; only believed that the earth had water, and elected a king by luck; gambled with a flat rock; the winner was made king. In Nile they elected a king and were wrestling, the strongest man represented the king for one year. So they had two parties and the people killed each other like flies; did not have any respect for each other; never had any remorsefulness for each other. When they gambled

the king a race they wrestled to the end; one died and the other became king. Any time they had a quarrel between themselves they killed the women and the children for revenge.

When the three prophets arrived in Nile the people were having a great revolution; one party against the other, and they elected a new king. They used to kill party by party. When Miel saw the cruelty he rushed into the battle and started to get hold of the strongest man and threw him away and hollered to them, "Stop the murder I don't want to see any blood in the earth and the two strongest were wrestling for the race of king." There was one stronger than the other and they wrestled to the end, but Miel jumped right in between them and took one in each hand and separated them He wouldn't let them kill each other. The two strongest were afraid and said to Miel, "Stranger, you are the strongest. You must be king. You won the race and must rule the people of Nile under your control for one year, and we are willing to obey your law and respect you because you are over us. We are all going to be willingly under your command because you represent our Father and we are all children."

But Miel said, "Brother, I am not for a king. I wouldn't be a king. But I want you to be peaceful; to respect each other. I don't want any disturbance and I don't want any murder. I don't want to see God's land soaked with blood. I want all of you under God the Father's Command and to obey the law of the earth."

In the meantime the greater enforcement from both parties started to fight again and assaulted the prophet Miel with his company. They thought they could kill him when they first struck. They said they didn't want any stranger to

rule their land, but Miel called the earth for his protection and the earth started to tremble so all the people rolled one on top of the other on the ground and all started crying and called, “Stranger, please, please help us and forgive us for brutality we used against you.”

Then Miel answered them, “The earth is calm,” and started to talk with all of them and said, “Brothers, I am the prophet Miel. I represent God, Father of the earth. I want all the earth to have a remorseful feeling of respect for the women and children; not to stain your soul with the innocent blood. I will forgive you all for your cruelty, but from now on I want all of you in good faith for your own benefit or God will destroy all the sinners. I don’t want any sinners on the earth. I want the earth to clear in peace.”

When the people heard he was the real prophet they all gathered around him and cried for forgiveness for their cruelty. And they all wanted him to be king over the Nile, but he said, ‘Brothers, I am the prophet. I cannot be king because I have to be traveling around to teach all the people; to return the visit they gave to me when I was a small child. I am leaving you in peace with your family and I recommend to you to respect the women and children. I wish all your strong men to not disturb the weak; because the weak men have just as much privilege as the strong. The weak men are the sons of God just the same as the strong men; because unhealthy men have just as much privilege in the world as the healthy. Unhealthy or healthy, they are the same. God gave strength to the strong men to defend the weak men. I want you to respect our women because the women are raising the children. If the women don’t generate the people will be diminishing every day. But we want to raise children to cover God’s earth and multiply the population and

increase the peacefulness. I am going away, but I will come back. I want to find all in peace and in good faith so God will recompense you with the good health and prosperity. My least command is to take good care of your children and respect them and the older people because we are young and must be old, too. Whatever we do to them somebody will do that to us when we get in the old age; so remained under God's command and I leave you my good will to all and the prophet Miel will depart for another country." But the voice of the prophet went all over the Nile people.

The prophet departed from the Nile to go to the fishermen's camp, but the people of Nile called him before he reached the fishermen's camp. They all ran after him and cried for him not to depart, crying, "Oh, you great prophet, you are the one who we have been visiting for nine years; now you come over to us and visit us and leave so soon. We cannot stay without you. We have been waiting for you for a long time. Now you are going to depart and we will remain without your guarding. We cannot stay in our land. We are willing to come with you because we do not know what to do. You are the God of the Nile people. You are the defender, because when the giant Trampol, king of Cainon, came here to steal our young women he saw wild and we cannot defend ourselves against his torch. Your power is the only one which can make him stay away from our women. You must forgive our brutality. We tried to assault you because we thought you were from the Cainon. If we knew you before we would not have done what we did. Please forgive us. Defend our women and children against the giant Trampol and his men."

And in the meantime the two strong men who were fighting to be king went over to Miel and one went on

one side and one on the other and prayed to the prophet Miel with tears in their eyes, “Oh, you, saviour of the Nile people, for our two wrestle and you were disturbed, and we commanded the men to assault you. It is not the men’s fault. We are to blame, but we are sorry for what we did. Don’t depart from the Nile people. We are willing to die for your sake and ask you to remain to command the people of the Nile for freedom of the children and women because they need you for their guardian.”

Miel said to them, “Stand up, brothers. I will not harm you because what you did was against your will; because you did not know who I am, but I cannot stay here all the time. I will be back soon. I want you from now on to be in great faith and great respect under God’s command, and respect each other so all will be peaceful.”

But they said, “It is not our fault; it was all the giant Trampol’s fault, who came here to get young women and to teach us all different. But now we know your word is true.”

When the prophet Miel heard about Trampol he suspected all the difference and he said, “Brother, if you will listen to me and be under God’s commandment I will beat your enemy. For your sake I will remain here until the giant Trampol comes and takes your women. I will teach him not to come into Nile any more he must stay away. I want each country to stay on their own land and if they don’t they will be sorry, because I represent God the Father, above all the people, for freedom of the children and the women, I defend all.”

And in the meantime the prophet Miel was talking with the Nile people and all the women ran after him and called for help. Miel asked them what this trouble was and the women said that the Trampol man came over to kidnap the

younger women and take them with him into Cainon, but the prophet Miel said, "Don't worry, don't be afraid, sisters. I will beat all the Cainon people."

Miel went over to meet the Trampol men and there were about three hundred of them, all armed with torches to scare the Nile people. But Miel went right close to them and said, "Stop! Do not go any further I want to know what you want on Nile land. What are you trying to do with those torches?" And the Cainon men answered to him, "We came to take three hundred women for our King Trampol and if you don't give them to us willingly we will take them all and burn the men's faces with our torches." But Miel hollered to them and he said, "Thieves of the Cainon outlaw. Disobey the law of God and I will give the women and I will teach you not to disturb other people. You think you are going to steal our women, but I will destroy all of you with your torches for the women's sake." Then Miel called the greatest tremor and all at once there came the greatest earthquake and storm which beat down all the Cainon people. They felt they were lost in the earthquake; they were mostly killed and wounded. There were very few remaining. There were about thirty or forty men saved from the earthquake and storm. Miel said to them, "I want you to go back to Cainon to report all to your King Trampol."

When the men arrived in Cainon, Trampol was waiting for three hundred women, but they brought him the news of the great destruction by one man, and Trampol said, "How can there be one man so strong in Nile? It is impossible to believe it but I will find out myself who this strong man is." So the giant Trampol called all the witches and all the members of the militia and sent the witches to discover who this strong man was and he went to his temple praying to

Bailan to find out who this man can be; how he can be so strong to him; but he cannot get any answer from Bailan.

After three days the witches returned and reported to him that they cannot cross the dividing line. The wind was so strong it pushed them back on the Cainon land but he ordered the witches to go over again and try all treachery to discover who that man was with all the power. The witches again returned to the divided line and waited there for a while night but could not cross, and in the morning they saw the prophet Miel alone and reported to Trampol that they saw one man of light complexion and medium size. "He is not dark like the Nile people. He is different he stands up and looks at the sky, not at the ground," they said.

Trampol sent the witches back for the third time, but they cannot discover what kind of power this stranger has, and this time they saw three men together; because the three prophets were all on the divided line. But they could not go close to them because the wind was so strong and kept all the witches from the divided line and could not see what kind the other two were with Miel.

The witches tried again, the fourth time, but the prophet Miel called a storm and heavy wind to destroy most all the witches. Some witches returned to King Trampol and reported what they had suffered. So Trampol suspected this strong powerful man must be the prophet Miel of the Ape and he said to the people, "If this man is the prophet Miel of the Ape, we will have to retire because his power is thirty times stronger than my power. I cannot go against him, but I will go over there and be a friend with him he has the power to destroy the whole world, it is better for us to be friends and to obey whatever he says."

Trampol departed from Cainon to go to Nile to see if

he was the prophet Miel or not and he took about thirty men with him and the three prophets departed from the divided line and returned to the Nile. All the Nile people crowded around and thanked him for their freedom and all were surprised at his power and the prophet Miel talked to the people of the Nile, giving them great encouragement. He said, "Brothers, you are all free; your women are saved forever; the thief of Cainon will not come over to steal your women any more they are afraid of me so I will leave all of you peaceful, but I want all of you to be in good faith under God's commandment and have respect for other people."

But when the people heard Miel was going to leave they started to cry because they didn't want Miel to go. They said, "We respect you like we do God and would like to have you for our king to defend the women and children." But Miel said to them, "Brothers, this I the third time I explained to you I am not your king. I am a prophet and I am only fit to teach the people and to defend women and children. You better get a king from your own race to represent father of the Nile."

So the people wanted Miel to elect a man fit to be their king and he said, "Any man who will please you we will respect him like we do you." Miel said, "Yes, I will do that for you, brothers." So he called a man by the name of Hamo, who was an intelligent man and of good character. Miel said to him, "Hamo, I elect you king of the Nile people, I trust the people under your control. You are the father and I want you to respect all your people alike, and to keep all under your law." And he said to the people, "I want you to obey your king and God the Father's wishes, God will guard you if you want him to and take care of your women and children, and to respect the old people, I don't want

you to kill, I don't want you to steal, don't disturb the peace of other people, so that that peace will stay with you and all your families. I am willing to leave for Caiol, and I will be back soon to see how you are getting along," but the people won't let him go, and follow him all the time.

In the meantime Miel was leaving for Caiol and the women started hollering again for help and the King Hamo went there to see what was wrong but he saw the giant Trampol with about thirty of his men and thought that he wanted to steal their women or give them trouble. He ran to Miel and said to him, "Oh great God, Trampol himself came here for trouble," and when Miel heard that Trampol was in the Nile he went to meet Trampol but Trampol went there to have friendship with Miel, and to have peace with the Nile people.

When Trampol saw the people of Nile were afraid, he said to them, "Friends I came here for peace, not for trouble, do not be afraid, I will not harm you, I came to see the great prophet from the Ape."

When Miel saw the giant Trampol from Cainon close to him and saw Miel he mentioned that he must be the prophet Miel. They looked each other straight in the eye and Trampol saluted Miel, saying, "Oh great prophet Miel, you are the father of God's people of Ape your power is fifty times stronger than mine, you are the God above the people, I am pleased to receive you and to remain your friend forever, I congratulate your presence in Egyptian land, I remember when I came over to see in Ape, when you were only a child, now you are the greatest prophet, I remember the first time I came over to see you with your Mother Rosata you were only two months old."

So Miel said to him, "Brother, I am Rosata's son. I am the

prophet Miel of the Ape. I represent the God of the earth and this is my brother, Giacobino, and this is Aldoman, the son of the sea. They are prophets the same as I, I came here to revisit all the people because all have seen me when I was a small child, you are the king of the Cainon people named Trampol.” “Yes,” Trampol replied, “I am.” Miel said, “I am pleased to see you and to visit you in the Nile land, but I warn you not to disturb the people; not to steal their women; not to kill any of them. If you do, you will be sorry, for should disobey my word, I will punish you with the Celestial disaster.”

Trampol then said, “Oh great prophet! I give you my promise to obey your word for you are the God and owner of the people, I will do what you wish, I won’t kill, steal, nor disturb anyone anymore, I’ll respect the people for your sake everywhere, and I will teach all my people to obey your command, but I want you to come over and visit all the people in Cainon, my people do not know you, but will be pleased to see and welcome you to our country.”

Miel said to Trampol, “Brother Trampol, I will come sometime to visit you and your people, and I congratulate you with pleasure, but I want you to teach them who I am and who God thy Father is, and also that they must not harm other people.”

Trampol promised not to disobey his wishes, he was willing to do his duty.

The prophet Miel then told Trampol that should he not keep his promised he would hang him to a tree. They shook hands and the prophet Miel departed for Caiol, and Trampol returned with his people to Cainon. Trampol explained to his people that they must be careful not to disobey the prophet Miel, to do whatever he wish of them

and continuing he said, "People of the Cainon I am your king, I am a strong power in the world, but the prophet is ten times more powerful than I, we must respect the Nile people because they belong to Miel, if we fail, Miel will come here and destroy all our country."

The prophet Miel gave his last speech to the Nile people and said, "Brothers you are free and friends with King Trampol and his people, but don't fail to obey God's command because I look after your trouble while you are under my command, I will give you the last good-bye," and the prophet departed from Nile to Caiol and on the way said to Giacovino and Aldoman, "When we arrive in Caiol we will give the people a great surprise because when we did pass there they did not know who we were."

When the three prophets arrived in the fisherman's camp all the fishermen went forth to meet them with the greatest enthusiasm. Miel stopped there one week and in the meantime two men went to Caiol and reported to the king all Miel's news. When the king of Caiol heard that Miel was in the fishermen's camp he united all his people, men and women, and went over to meet Miel. The Caiol people carried with them green grass, leaves and flowers for a great reception to Miel. Miel, with his company, departed from the fishermne's camp to go into Caiol, but when about a half mile away he saw the king of Caiol with all his people. When they met, Miel knew the king, but the king did not know Miel. But two men went to bring the message to the king and they said to him, "Oh loyal king, you see the third man, the one with the beard, is the prophet." So the king walked to the prophet and kneeled down with great respect and said: "Oh you, the God of the people passed through Caiol and I didn't know who you were, but God sent me the

message and I came to meet you, and I pray your loyalty to come over into Caiol with me for a visit to my people and teach them of God.”

Miel was surprised to see all the people that had left their own land to see the prophet. Miel introduced the king to the other two prophets and said, “This is my brother Giacovino and this Aldoman, the son of the water, they are prophets, the same as I, we are traveling the world in the name of God to teach his commandments.”

So together they departed for Caiol and the people cheered them for Miel’s sake. When they arrived in Caiol the people greeted them with a great welcome. Miel remained in Caiol for over two months to teach the people about God, he was so glad to see the Caiol people in good faith, and the king of Caiol always kept his people in good respect under God’s commandment and the law. All Caiol people always obeyed the law and wishes of God. Miel said to the king, “I am pleased to see your people under your control and you have a great interest with the commandments of God Father, but God will recompense your people and you with peacefulness.”

After Miel gave so many speeches to the people of Caiol, he departed for Caion to see what the people there were doing and as he passed through a mountain of Egyptian pyramid he was surprised to see that forest without food and he said to Giacovino and Aldoman, “I prove some different in this part of the world, this forest does not produce food like the one in Ape.”

When they were in Caion they found the people all different, they were all cold and afraid, so he asked them why they were so afraid, and one of the women answered him, “Because the lodge men commanded them, as they were men

of a God and we are their slaves; if we fail the lodge order they will punish all the slaves.” Miel said, “No one can be a slave under God’s commandment, the people there all have the privilege to be free.” Miel went over to the lodge house and saw three to four hundred men, all with long beards, and he said to them, “Who is this king of yours? How do you rule the law above your people.” The king got up and said to him, “I am the king of the Caion people, I am the leader of God’s men, and God gave us the beard to rule the slaves and to let them work our land, we are all from God Father Celestial Trouns, we all represent God in the earth and command the people under God Father Beard.”

Miel said to him, “How is it that you are the son of God and the slaves are not from God?” the king replied, “Because God gave us a beard like his own and the women and the men that have no beards are all slaves, because they are without beards.” Miel said, “I want to know if you are the beard under God’s command?” And the king replied, “I will tell you soon and plan, God said, ‘I am the greatest God with a beard, I will give my men the same as I have, all my sons that have beards are my representatives in the earth, those unworthy of having beards are slaves used for working the land, the slave is not worthy of being my child, I take care of my beard and I want my son to do the same, the man with a beard had to work on his beard, and the man without one had to work the land, all my children are willing to take care of their beards, keeping them clean and making them grow longer and the one who had the longest one, was made king, and all the others were made members of the law, so you belong to the law and your two slaves belong to the work with the women.’”

Miel said to the king, “You are nothing but a traitor and

disobey the law of the earth. You tried to rule the earth but will command the earth under my power. I will show who is the commander of God Father.” The king remarked, “This is my country, my land, I am king to rule all the people under my command. All Caion people are willing to obey my law, you are strange, you must do the same as the others do, and do what I say to you and your two slaves are like the others. But Miel said, “To whom are you talking, are you scaring the people or me?” The king replied, “I will talk with you personally and for your punishment I will turn your beard so you will be a slave.” And the king commanded his membership to punish Miel, but Miel defended himself, he called the earth to tremor for his defense and an earthquake started. The men of the lodge, with the beards began to roll on the earth, one on top of the other, and started to holler for help, and prayed to Miel to stop the tremor of the earth. But Miel said, “If you are representatives of the God, why don’t you stop it yourselves, why not call God for your help?” Miel moved away west of Caion and he said, “I want to rule Caion for awhile. I am going to have two parties, one the representative of the beard and the other the commander of God,” and then Miel hollered to everybody, “Any person, man or woman, who are pleased to obey my word pass out my side, they are free from the earthquake.” So Miel made large marks on the ground to show the divided line between his land and the land of the bearded men, and he said, “Any members of the lodge willing to remain, stay on your own side of the line with your lodge membership. My law is short for men and women, they are all free, not slaves, everyone is provided with his food and his own work, with beard or no beard, they are children of God, they all have just the same privilege to stay in the earth because the earth was

created by God Father, who is the only owner of the earth and all that is on the earth God commanded, don't permit of having any slaves, we are all the same and must obey the God and the real law of the earth, not the fake opinion of the lazy bastard, but the people all passing my way belong to me and those on the other side belong to the lodge."

But before Miel was through with his speech, all the people were on his side but the members of the lodge, who remained alone under the scared influence of the tremor of the quake.

The earthquake lasted for forty-eight hours and the lodge members were so afraid that they were praying to Miel to listen to them and to save the lodge members for the sake of his God, so Miel stopped the tremor and told the people to stay there until he came back, and he passed over to the other side where he made a great speech to the lodge members, saying to them, "I want all of you to realize God's commandment, realize what you lazy people have been doing to these poor men and women, what it means to be a slave under the false law, you are nothing but to disobey God's commandment, God will help his children in any suffrage. Anyone who has faith in God will never miss it, God will help you, Anyone who tries to be false will have the punishment of God upon him, and will be made to realize that he is a wrong actor. God ordered all of you to take care of your beard, and after three days I will pass my review and if anyone has lost the beard I will send them with color and Miel will get hold the king's beard and pull it internally and tear it out and he said as a sample, and as for those lose their beard, they will depart for Afra."

After twenty-four hours time God Father punished all the false men and all the beards fell off. Remaining without

beards they tried to recover them so as not to be put out of the forest. They caught the women and cutting off their hair tried to make false beards in order to show Miel that they still had beards, and to make him believe that they were God's members.

When Miel passed to review them, he pulled all the false beards off, one by one, and his brother Giacovino, with Aldoman, carried them out and sent them over to the forest where the colored people lived. Giacovino said to them, "Go to Afra, God doesn't want the men without a beard because your beard was all infected, and now you must go to Afra to cure your beard and to learn God's commandment, then you will know how to treat other people."

Miel had discharged three or four hundred men from the lodge of Caion, and as soon as they were out, there came a great storm, with a strong wind and dragged all of them away from Caion to Afra where they lived with the colored people.

After the lazy men from Caion were restored in Afra they tried to get revenge, and united all the colored people under their command to go over to Caion and put Miel out. So the colored people all crowded around the former Caion men and started back to Caion to kill the three prophets, and to make the people there believe that the prophets were thieves.

Miel soon departed from Caion to go to Afra to see what the colored people were doing, and when about half way there he saw them, together with the lodge men. As Miel drew nearer, he said to his company, "I will scare them all up." When they were within hearing distance of each other, Miel heard the lodgemen holler to the colored people to kill the three thieves, but Miel was too quick for them, he took

the colored, one by one, and threw them one against the other, then he called the earthquake for his help. The earth started to tremble and all the colored people fell down and rolled one on top of the other. But the lazy men of the lodge hollered to them again to kill the thief and his company, kill the thief. But the colored people were so scared they hollered and cried for help, and in the meantime they were laughing and talked with Giacovino and Aldoman. Many of the colored people tried to chew themselves they were so scared, and hollered for help. God was coming down to see what was going on and when he saw Miel he said to him, "Miel I am surprised for your greatest service, you are a real prophet, my representative on earth." Miel said, "I am thankful, my Celestial Father, for the power you have given me, I lay my soul under your command, I will do whatever you wish, I will turn all the people under your command."

Meil had a long talk with God and expressed to God what he found in the world and what the people were doing. When Miel was talking to God, Giacovino and Aldoman were kneeling down thanking God for the power given to him. So at that time God gave to Miel a free privilege to do whatever he wished, he was willing to give all his power to Miel in case he needed it.

When God Father departed from Miel, Miel stopped the earthquake, and the colored people became calm, and Miel said to his company, "I will erect a large lake so that the colored generation will not mix with the Caion." Miel tapped the earth with his left foot and raised his right hand and said, "In the name of God and the power of the prophet become the greatest lake in the earth to separate the colored from the Caion, and became all in one, one big lake, between Afra and Caion." Miel named the lake Tango and the lake

Tango was the first work made by him for the earth, so Afra and Caion were separated by water.

The colored people used to eat wild fruit, herbs, and the bark from the trees. When the colored people and the lazy men were discharged from Caion they saw in the lake and thought they were free from Miel because Miel was on the Caion side and they were on the other, but they were surprised to see the greatest miracle performed by Miel.

The lodge men told the colored people that we need not be afraid anymore because the prophet cannot pass in the water. Only one of the three prophets walked in the water, the same as we walk on the paved streets, passed onto the colored side.

When the colored people saw Miel on their side, they started to run away from him, but he said to them, "In the name of God, do not run away, stop it or I will stop you." So he called the earthquake again and they started to cry and holler and ask Miel for help. So he started talking with them but he could not understand these people, because they used the sign language, so Miel began to work with the sign of his hands to let them understand what he wished.

All the lazy men from Caion lodge knelt down to beg the pardon of Miel and asked him not to destroy all of them. When the colored people saw the Caion men kneeling down to Miel, they did likewise, and prayed to him by using their hands, and jabbering, "Ti! Ti! Ti!" So Miel came and calmed them and became friendly with them.

In a short time the colored people were all around Miel, like being in a race together, and started to dance, grabbed up a tree and hollered to give Miel a great welcome. He ordered the lazy men to learn to culture the land to speak and let the colored people make their food like in other

countries. Not to eat any more, grass, bark or roots.

Miel departed Afra to Caion and the colored women gave him a little child but he thanked them for what they offered and explained, by a sign, that children belonged to their mother and should not be given away.

When the colored people saw the three prophets departing they wanted to go with them, and they followed them until they reached the lake, but when they reached there, the three prophets cross the water, while they had to remain on their side. They began crying and wanted Miel to stay with them, and they gathered around the lake to wait for his return.

When Miel arrived in Caion the people were afraid and tried to obey him the best they could. Miel ordered the Caion people to bring all kinds of seed to the people of Afra so they could produce food for their own needs. Miel gave the greatest speech to all the people of Caion saying to them, “Brothers I am with my and the name of God and I did free you from the brutality, and as you are all free and I want you to remain peaceful and obey God’s commandment, do not kill or steal or have any slaves, nor disturb the peace of other people. If you fail my word, I will be back soon, and then all the guilty I will put out with the colored. I want you to all respect one another and everyone must provide his own food for his children and women because the people there are all the same and everyone must do his duty. And they must respect the God command before everything. If you don’t want to be punished, do what is right and I want all of you men to care of your wives and children because the children need their father and mother. The father provides the food and the mother takes care of them and if he doesn’t provide for his wife and children he disobeys the command

of God, and teach the children to respect and obey their father and mother, and the women must respect the men because the men always provided for what they need and raise their children to re-populate God's earth and teach the children to respect God and to love the people. If all of you mind my word you will be happy with your family."

Miel decided to depart from Caion so he said to the people, "I will leave you, but I will be back soon and I want all of you peaceful until I come back." So Miel departed Caion to Aiel, but the people didn't want him to leave and said to him, "Oh God Father of the Caion people, do not go away, stay with our children, our women are willing to respect you and do whatever you say, we are afraid if you go, the lodge men with the beard will come back to disturb our pace," so Miel said to them, "Do not worry, they cannot come back, because they cannot pass the lake; if you do need my help, call me under God's name and I will come over to help you, but now I must leave for Aiel to free all the men under the women's law. I must free the Aiel people because they are slaves." So the three prophets departed for Aiel but all the women and children followed them all day and in the evening they had to return to Caion while Miel went to Aiel to investigate the people and to find out what they were doing.

When the three prophets arrived in Aiel mountain, they went on into the women's court for information how they used to rule the country and how the women had the command over the people, and the men had to do whatever the women said so the women had so many men to guard them in the court for the name of the law and kept all the men slaves and mostly all of the women never married. The remained single the same as the men. When Miel spoke

with the women, "How is it that you do not marry" and the women said, "We do not need to marry because all the men are our slaves," and he asked the men why they did not marry and the said, "Because the women were a wild temptation," so about three-fifths of the population were single, and about two-fifths were married. Every single man had to work and brought all the food to the women's court, and the married men had to divide the food with the court women, so the women had everything they wanted. If any married woman had any quarrel with her husband, they had to report them in court, so the husband was condemned to receive from five to fifty strokes with a club and turned him into a slave. This is the women's rule of Aiel.

When Miel arrived in the women's court he asked them why they keep the men slaves so the women said, "This is the law of Aiel. We do not need the men, we can do without them," so Miel said, "How is it that you command the men and rule the people," and the women, "God gave the earth to the women and not the men. The men have only the privilege to work and to provide for the women and beside that they have no business in the earth," so Miel said to the women, "No you are mistaken, God made the earth for everybody, not just for women only." So the women said to Miel, "We have been owner of the world and we are going to keep it. This is not your business affair because you are three disturbers." Miel said, "That is all, you will find out that the earth belongs to God and not to you." So the women got mad at Miel and called the guards, told them to get a hold of Miel and punish him with thirty strokes and turn him over to the slaves for five years. Miel said to the women, "If you so, go ahead and try to give me thirty hits with the cane." The women got mad and ordered the guards to increased

the punishment to fifty hits each. But Miel commanded the earth and started a great earthquake then he said to the women, "If you are the owner of the earth stop the tremor." When the women saw that the earth was shaking they started to holler and were afraid, and said, "Please stop the earth! Please! Please! You will be king, you are the real commander of the earth, and are the ruler of the Aiel people." After Miel scared all the women he raised his hands and stopped the earthquake but after the earth was calm the women started to holler again to Miel and said to him, "You are nothing but a thief, you came over to steal our peace and make trouble, we want you to leave immediately, stay away from our country. We must be peaceful," but Miel said, "I wish all your women to go out at once and not stay in court for to confuse the man under your false law." The women tried to call their guardians for help but all men were out of court enjoying themselves and did not hear them. Then Miel went out and said, "Brothers you are all free under the women's false law."

Prophet Miel then called all the people and said to them, "Hear my speech, Brothers, you are all free and independent and are able to do whatever you desire, all I want you to do is to obey God's commandments and my word, and I don't want you to do any harm to the women, you must respect them and use your man's judgment for the law of the people."

"I want women to respect man because men are the ones that provide all you need. The men and the women are all the same and I want you to respect each other and to raise your children, and also to teach your children to obey God's commandment."

As soon as the unmarried men heard this they were very

happy and started to dance and holler and said, "Hurrah, we are free, and we are willing to do as you say." In the meantime the women came out of the court and the leader went over to Miel and said to him, "You are a thief, you came to steal our peace and you made trouble with the women law, you want our women to be slaves under the men."

Then Prophet Miel answered, "I did not come to take your peace and to make your women slaves. God don't want slaves on the earth. You can do whatever you wish. If you don't want to get married I won't make you and if you do want to get married I won't stop you. If the earth belongs to you why didn't you stop the tremor? When I order you to do something do not refuse me, because the earth belongs to God, and men and women have the same right to stay on. I am Prophet Miel of Ape and I represent God on the earth. Everyone is the same, man or woman."

When the women heard he was Prophet Miel they were surprised and prayed to him to forgive them for insulting him. They said, "We are willing to do whatever you wish, we are willing to obey your command."

Miel said, "I want all people to obey God Father's commandments." Then he started to explain God's command. There was a man that followed every step that Miel made with a basket of food and beverages and always said to him, "Oh Great God, eat and drink, so you will feel good," and Miel was surprised at this little man's good heart. Miel said to him, "You are a real man, what is your name." The little man said in reply, "My name is Anat, I belong to the married family, but I want you to eat and drink." Miel asked Anat, "How many children have you?" He replied, "I have sixteen children, eight sons and eight daughters, and we are always happy and peaceful. My wife's name is Adal,

she is so good to me she never reported me to the law.”

The prophet said to Anat, “Anat you are so kind to me, you have a large family in Aiel so I will elect you the king of the Aiel people,” and Anat said to him, “Oh great God, I do not know how to be king, I am too small, if I do accept and be king, the people will not obey me, you better find a larger man to be king.” Miel said, “Anat you are small but you have wonderful faith in God’s commandments, so the king doesn’t have to be large, you are fit to be king, I will teach you how to rule your people. The king represents the Father of all the people in the country, the king has the law in his hands and with this law he must obey the law and respect God’s commandment. If the people do not obey you, I will be back to punish all of them.” So Miel took up three kinds of people; first starting line by line picking up all the family men and women with the children and set them in the center and all the women without men, that used to represent the law, and placed them in the western part of Aiel, and he picked out all the men without wives and he placed them in the eastern part of the country, so the family people had the women on one side and the men on the other and he made a long cane and gave it to King Anat, and he said to him, “Anat, do not let the women and men mix together, and in case they disobey your word you punish them with your cane,” and he turned over to the women’s side and said to them, “I place all you women without the men so you will be happy, but do not disobey your king’s law, and all you women with your husbands, you are all free under Anat’s law and I represent your king and Father, so all of you must be peaceful with your children for the name of God the Father, I want to see all of you women without the men and I want to see what they will complete before I return

because you will be happy without the husbands, so remain happy forever. Anyone who disobeys your king or law, I will destroy with the earthquake and other celestial punishment.”

So after Miel had replaced all the women, he went over to the men’s side in the east to give them all a speech. Miel said to them, “Brothers you are without the women and I will price your word, and you know that the women are sassy and trouble-makers so I place you alone without the women to let you be happy, but I don’t want no one to pass on the women’s side. If you do, there will not be anymore tranquillity, I will be back, then I will punish all of you. I will destroy the earth under your feet; all I want is for you to be alone, without the women to obey the law and God’s commandment to show to me your protection when I come back. I leave all of you under the king’s commandment, he represents the Father of the earth and all of you men have the respect and obey your king and law. If you don’t, he will punish you with severity.”

In the meantime the king Anat went over to Miel with a basket in his hand to let Miel eat and drink and he said to him, “Oh you great God, I want you to eat and drink because you haven’t had anything for a long time.” Miel laughed and said, “All you want is to see me drink and eat. I cannot eat and drink all of the time,” so Anat said, “Oh you great God I will do whatever I can for you, because you are too good. For your sake if any woman or man disobeys my law I will beat them with my cane, but to do me a favor, you are willing to eat.” Miel said, “Anat your nation wants to see everybody eat, but we cannot stand with the food only, we must have God’s word in our souls. You are too good because you have sixteen children. All you have done in your life is to feed your children. That is why you will not see everybody

eat, but I will recompense you with the command of the king over your people. I am sure how good you have been to your children and myself, and that you will treat the people in the same way, but god will return all this to your family. Now Anat, I must leave you, but I will be back soon to see you because I must go to see my People in Ape, I have not seen them for a long time.”

The prophets said their last goodbye to Anat and departed for Caiol. They were so happy because it was a free country and they had the people of Cainon calm and peaceful. When the three prophets arrived at the gate of Caiol it was late in the evening so they stopped in a cattle and sheep master's camp over night, but at midnight the people of Caiol saw many lights in the sky above the three prophets, so they thought that it must be a Celestial sign, but in daybreak when they went over to the cattle and sheep camp to see if any trouble had come in the night to the master of the animals, they found that the three prophets were there and were eating breakfast with the sheep-master. They returned right away to Caion to report all the news to their king and the king united his men and all the young women and went over to meet Miel with his company. When the king arrived there the prophet was eating and he went over to Miel and said to him, “Ha, Ha, good morning, great prophet, you have been saluting me at midnight with a great light and the greatest celestial signs. I did not know you were here, but if I knew you were here I would be willing to come over any time to take you with me.’

And in the meantime, all the old people and men were loaded with green leaves and flowers and were singing and hollering and threw the flowers and leaves all around the three prophets and sang to them the greatest joyful songs.

The youngest women brought to the prophets so many garlands made with flowers and leaves and sang jubilee songs and offered all the garlands and all the colomps to the prophets. But Miel said, "Sisters, I do not want all these fancy things. I will accept the colomps but not the garlands, because whatever I do to the women is my duty and will do willingly with the wish of God and God wants all your souls clear without the sin. All the people have been free, and I free all in the name of God; not to have any recompense. God will pay me for what I do to his people so I want all of you to be close to God's commandment. God let Bailan get away from you."

Miel then departed from the Cainon people and went to the king's court and stayed there for about two weeks. After this time he then departed for the Ape, but his mother, with King Raffan, had received the news from the Caiol people. The king united all the young men and went to receive the great prophet, Miel, because he had been away for ten years. When Miel and his company had walked through the forest for nine days and there they found food and Miel said to his brother: "We must thank God; see how the forests have given us food. We are in the real land of God now; but God doesn't produce any food in the pyramids around Egypt. Over there they do not have anything but rocks."

When the three prophets with their company crossed the forest Miel had a great impression. Because all the lions, bears, stags, steers and tigers crowded around him and were glad to see him. But the Caiol people were afraid to see all these animals around Miel. Miel said: "Brothers, if we treat them right the animals are the best friends, because they let us walk in this forest and gave their company to us with the greatest enjoyment. The forest belongs to the wild animals

and we are thankful to them for letting us pass.”

Miel was playing with the wild animals along the road for three or four days and he had much enjoyment with them. The rest of the people were surprised to see how domesticated the animals were. They played with Miel like they were raised together, and in the meantime they gave thanks to the Father for the freedom of the people, and Miel said: “Omnipotent, Celestial Father, your greatest loyal power, surrendered to me all animals of the forest They are so pleased to see me pass around them and the lazy men of Caion tried to kill me. They do not want me to pass out of this land the Aiel women tried to put me out. The animals of the forest were so kind to me and they had more faith in the Caion people than the Aiel women. The animals offered me all the respect.”

The women and men of the Caion did not offer him anything and in the meantime Miel was through praying and they heard the greatest divine word from God say: “Miel! Miel! I will be with you to congratulate you on your return. I will give you my best regards in this forest with these wild animals because some of them will be the greatest fatality and greatest help over the Ape people. I will recompense them with the free land, but Caion people, I will curse them under my gospel. They should not own the land and not be encouraged to defend themselves as they depend on some other country to defend their women and children. They must be disturbed from any country which crosses by celestial willing power; they won't have any courage to keep clear land.”

They had to go around to the other countries for help and the prophet Miel thanked God, the Father, for whatever he does for his sake and turning to the Caiol people said:

“Brothers and sisters, all of you must hear the greatest word of God, Father and the celestial power and who is able to destroy the whole world. Remember, he wants all of you to be in good faith with him, and you remember how he crossed the Caion people; for them not have any land; not to have any courage to defend themselves.”

At the same time Miel saw a big crowd of people and he knew they were his people from Ape. He talked with the other prophets and said, “Our people are coming after us.” He walked ahead of everybody so as to meet his people and all the lions followed him. When Miel was close to his people he saw King Raffan with all his tribe carrying Miel’s mother on their shoulders. Miel ran to his mother and said, “Oh mother. I have not seen you for ten years. How have you been getting along?” He fainted helplessly; at the same time Giacovino stood on the other side of his mother, Rosata cried helplessly to see her two sons. Miel could not say a word for over half an hour. King Raffan went to Miel to congratulate him upon his return, and picked Miel up because he had fallen down and tried to encourage him. King Raffan said to him, “Oh, great prophet, you were away from Ape and we have not seen you for a long time, but we were enjoyed with you. Your mother was without you for ten years and she was very glad to hear of your triumphant victory. You have freed all the world. We are so triumphant because from the Ape people we have the greatest prophet.” Soon Miel began talking and said to the king, “Brother, I am glad for my return. I thank God, the Father, for the help that he gave me to free all the people of the earth, but I am more surprised and proud I am to introduce to you another prophet. His name is Aldoman. He is the son of the water. We got him in a fishermen’s camp in Caiol. We three are

now all together and have been traveling together. We have freed all the world. They are all the same on earth under God.”

When prophet Miel arrived in Ape he went right to his home. The people had a great desire to see him. As soon as Miel arrived in his home he started praying and thanking God and said, “Oh God, I am so thankful to you. I am so glad to see my cabin after ten years of traveling.” He showed Aldoman his cabin and said, “This is my birthplace, and the dearest cabin. I will keep it in good care. I will be buried here when I die.”

All the Ape people were cheering around the prophet Miel’s home with the greatest pleasure and happiness. All of them gave Miel whatever they had and he was glad to see all of his people gathered around him and he had the greatest respect for all. The king remained with Miel and he was glad to stay with him and learn about his traveling. Miel said to Aldoman, “Brother, you and I were born in hard luck. You were the son of the water and I was the son of a lazy man in Ape. My mother suffered the greatest misery in life with my father. But now we are so great and proud because we serve our Celestial Father, God. My father did not take any care of my mother and I and still I became a prophet under God’s wishes. We were born very poor, but we are wealthy with duty and faith.”

All the Ape people took the provisions they had and said to Miel, “Oh great prophet, we have been saving these for you all the time; now it is all yours.” Miel thanked all his people and for fifteen days spoke to them because all were crowded around him and everyone was pleased to hear his voice and the people did not care if they had anything to eat, or if they slept or not, as long as they could be around Miel.

After fifteen days the people were well satisfied and Miel had a chance to enjoy being alone with his mother. King Raffan went back to Miel and took his daughter with him and saluted Miel like the poets used to do, and he said to Miel, "You are the god of the earth. You are the mountain of Ape, the great prophet for all of the people. You are free; my daughter is yours. She will recompense you with the love for the sake of the Ape country"

Miel answered him, "Brother, I will thank you very kindly for your opinion. I cannot do as you ask because I have a duty to some other person," and Miel, turning to his mother, asked, "Mother, who was with you for the ten years that I was away?" The mother answered, "Oh you dearest son, the orphan Sofan. When her parents died she stayed with me and respected me just the same as if I were her mother. She has been with me ten years and obeys me well." Miel turned to Sofan with his great smile and said to her, "Sofan, for recompense, that you gave to my mother company, I will punish you with severity." Young Sofan started to cry and kneeling down to him said, "You are the god. You may do whatever you wish."

When Rosata heard Miel was going to punish Sofan she thought he was doing what he did to his father and thought the earth would swallow up Sofan. She was so afraid she threw herself in Miel's arms so he would not harm Sofan, because she was so good to her. Miel said, "Mother, it is better to condemn her than to recompense her," and Rosata said, "Oh dearest child of mine, kill me, but do not harm poor Sofan." Miel said, "Mother, you are my mother. I cannot give you the condemnation I would give to her. It belongs to Sofan, not to you." He turned to Sofan and said, "Come, Sofan, come over to accept my condemnation." So

when she went close to Miel she was shivering with fear and thought Miel was going to harm her and she said to him, “Do whatever God will permit you to do. You are the prophet. You do what you wish.” Miel said to her, “Sofan, for all the respect you have given my mother I condemn you to pick either one of us three. We are all the same to you. Pick the one who will please you; he will be your husband and you will remain with my mother forever. If in case he can’t please you you can remain with my mother just the same and we will respect you like a sister.”

The young Sofan knelt down and said, “Oh, you great prophet. You are the father. You are willing to recompense me for my services by offering me the love of the greatest person. How can I thank you for all you do for me? The only thing I can do to recompense you is to give you all my love and my respect, but I leave it to you. Whoever you want me to love I will love.” But Miel said, “No, it must be the one you want; you are to have the choice.” Sofan felt bashful and said to him, “If— if, if you will permit, I will ask for your love and I will give all my love and remain with your mother.” Miel grabbed Sofan with his strong hands and said, “Sofan, what will you now do for me?” Sofan said, “If God, the Father, will permit, I will give you twins in my first birth I make, because two children are worth more than any king to you.” Miel said, “Sofan, if you wish, God will be willing to give you twins.”

Rosata was very happy when she heard of the engagement between Sofan and Miel. She was happy to have Sofan in her company forever and so many people came and gave Miel great congratulations for a happy future and he said to them, “I thank you all, but I will go to see the real one and he give me the congratulations.”

All the women sang happiness praises for the bride, but Miel with Sofan walked away from the people and called to God, “Oh Celestial Father, I want you to come down to bless my marriage.” Before Miel was through praying they saw a large coach made from a cloud with many big lights coming down so fast Miel did not know it was God. He kneeled down to thank God and he heard a divine voice singing with the greatest melody and God said, “Here I am to celebrate the first marriage of duty and come in the greatest arch stood above the earth.” And God told Miel to “Get up and go up in the arch with your bride.” And with his mother and two prophets, all five went up to the arch and so many colomps and the greatest music of the harps and God said to Miel: “Miel! Miel! I come to celebrate your marriage because there are so many men on earth that have ordered to celebrate your marriage; because you are above them all. I am the only one able to celebrate this marriage — this marriage made on my gospel and the oath sworn must be forever because it has been given under my gospel. If anyone fails they are condemned. They are committing a great sin against my willing.” Only the one showing so many lights around the arch and God the Father with the Saint Eternity Jove, and the Venus were with them standing in front of the prophet and his wife. God raised his hand and said, “My greatest prophet, I began on you the first marriage of duty. You are the ones sworn under my gospel to be united forever, and not to have any separation or disobey. This is the new law of my celestial command and from now on I want some of mine to represent in the earth for celebrating the marriage in my gospel and the second, swear that he will be in the presence of the king or any representative of the law, so the marriage will be in two sworn, one for duty

and another for law and either one should not be separated, each person, man or woman, think it over first before they swear, because the sworn is one and cannot be annulled. The marriage means to unite two hearts in one and to love each other forever and to raise the children under my commandments.”

After God was through with his talking he took Miel with one hand and Sofan with the other and united them together. He said, “Miel! Miel! You are united together forever; love one another and obey my commandments. I am the first and above all on the earth or sky.” Sofan said to God, “Oh Celestial Father, I wish your mercy not to let my wish fail, to have twins for my first birth of my marriage.” God gave his willing to Sofan to have the twins and God departed for his celestial throne. He left very slowly singing a celestial melody, united with the harp, and Miel got off the arch and all the people began cheering and all they heard was God’s word how he said, “Glorious, peaceful, in the first couple united in the presence of the people. The first sworn by duty all the same will be,” and God with his celestial company departed at once. Miel and his bride remained and Miel turned to the king and said, “I will swear in your presence under the laws and rules to be true to my wife forever and to obey the law of the people.” The king was very glad to celebrate the marriage of the prophet and all the people took their very best presents to Miel and his bride, and extended their congratulations and wished them happiness forever.

From Miel’s marriage they originated the law of marriage and duty, and to represent God. So any man who has a child must take their child before a representative of God so that the child will grow up into manhood and be under the

laws of the people. And the representative of God took the child in his hands and raised him above his head and said “Oh Celestial Father, I offer you this child to be under your command; to represent me in the form of a priest, minister or master.”

At that time they were called representatives of God, and the representatives of God could not be married because if he represents the law of his wife he cannot represent the law of God. The first two representatives of God, who were the prophets Giacovino and Aldoman, began in Ape 973 years after our first father, Adam.

The first law marriage of Miel was in the presence of the king. The king did not know what to do and said, “Oh great prophet, I do not know what to do. You are bowed to by everyone on the earth. I cannot marry you because God is the only one that is above you.” Miel said to the king, “You heard the divine word of God. He is the one above all on the earth and the celestial so the law is next to Him. You are the king that represents the law of the people. Therefore you are the one that has to marry me because I am the first that begins the marriage of duty and law. From now on I want every man and woman to do the same as I did with the representative of God and the representative of law.”

After the prophet Miel was married he remained in Ape for a long time with the other two prophets, and his wife and mother were all living in his home. The people of Ape went to visit Prophet Miel and his every day and brought them gifts. They were so happy that the three prophets were with them. Prophets Giacovino and Aldoman remained the representatives of God of the Ape people.

When the prophet’s wife became a mother she gave birth to twins and they were boys. She begged Miel to pray to

God for her sake for the mercy God gave her to keep her promise to Miel for her twin boys.

Miel called Giacovino and Aldoman and showed them his two sons. Miel took his two sons, one at a time, outside and raised them with his hands to the sky to show them to God and then said: "Oh God, this is a father's duty. I show to you my first child and I name him Divine. I hope that he will be a great representative of your command." He then took the other child out and said, "This is the other child. I name him Duty because he is the son of the first marriage of the duty."

Miel was so happy of the promise of Sofan of the birth of two sons that after ten days he ordered Giacovino and Aldoman to bring his children to the Temple of God and join them under God's commandment. The king asked Miel if he could take the children to the Temple of God. Miel said to the king, "You are to join my children under God the Father's wish." The king took the children to God the Father's Temple and joined them under God's command, duty.

Miel remained in happiness with his family for a long time, in joy with his children. One day God called him and told him to depart soon for Caion to defend the Caion children and their mothers against giant Trampol's cruelty.

Giant Trampol, king of the Cainon people, began to disturb all the Caion people. Trampol united all his men and armed them with torches and went to Caion and scared all the men with his torch fires and captured all the men who were fit to work. King Trampol forgot his promise he gave to Miel; he thought the malice of the Cainon was stronger than God's power. He started with the greatest brutality to destroy all the people of Caion. The first trip he made he had a great victory. He captured all the young men that he

met and burned some of the men's faces. All the witches ruined the children. Miel, as soon as he received the news from God the Father, departed from Ape and went to Caion to free all the Caion people from King Trampol's malice. He called his brothers, Giacovino and Aldoman and said to them, "Trampol has forgot the promise he gave to me in Nile land. He went over to Caion to disturb the people, but in the name of God we will go there to free all the children and women. I will give Trampol what I promised him."

Prophet Miel was in a hurry and kissed his family good-bye and went over to see his king and told him to get all the young men together with arms and follow him to Caion. The king called all his young men and told them of Miel's wish, but the young men knew of Miel's departure and were all ready before the king called them. They went over to see the king and said, "We are willing to go and offer Miel our help in his dangerous work with King Trampol." All the youngest men, voluntarily armed with canes, followed the three prophets to give all their help.

When the prophet Miel arrived in Caion he found the people all upset. They were all ruined by King Trampol. Most of the children were bruised on their spines, so the three prophets started to heal them. After they were in Caion for two days Miel mentioned that Trampol was on the way. He saw in the sky all the movements Trampol was making. The Giant Trampol, king of the Caion was on his way with his men to go again into Caion. Miel was very mad with Trampol and swore to God to destroy Trampol with all his maliciousness. He departed from Caion alone to meet Trampol. He walked fast so as to meet Trampol on his territory by nightfall. Miel saw many lights and he went very near and saw Trampol with all his men, armed with torches.

They were going to Caion. Trampol was walked ahead of his men nearly two hundred feet and he walked very rapidly, intending to reach Caion by daybreak. When the prophet Miel saw Trampol he grit his teeth and his eyes became blue with fire. Miel walked over to Trampol, but the king did not see Miel and when he was close to him he grabbed Trampol by the chest and pulled his torch and fork away from him and threw them into the sea and said to him, "Trampol, I will treat you for what you are doing with the Caion people." He lifted Trampol by his hands and struck his feet on the ground. The ground swallowed up Trampol right up to his shoulders.

After the prophet Miel had buried Trampol he called for an earthquake. The wind and storm beat all the men of Trampol back and they suffered a great loss. They rolled on the ground the whole night through. By daybreak the earth became quiet and calm, but the men under Trampol were about twelve miles away from him. They were all worn out and returned to Cainon. Trampol remained buried in the road. All the Cainon people began to call their king Trampol. The spirit answered them and told them that Trampol would return to them, but they could not discover where he was. The prophet Miel returned to Caion and reported to his company what he had done to Trampol, he had taken with the two strong men and two ropes for future use. Giant Trampol was buried in the ground for three nights and two days, he prayed continually to Bailan, Itol, and Caine to effect his release, but that time no spirit answered him.

When Miel arrived where Trampol was buried he was indifferent to Trampol and tried to discover all his malicious work. He acted under the Itol spirit and went to Trampol,

saying to him, "Trampol, I came over to help you and take you from the ground so you would not suffer any more." Miel grabbed Trampol by the shoulders and pulled him out. Trampol was very glad to think that he was free and he said to Miel, "Who are you to have such great power?" Miel said to him, "I am your Itol, and these two with me are Caine and Bailan." Miel put Aldoman under the spirit of Caine and Giacovino under the spirit of Bailan, and Trampol believed this and said, "Oh my Father Itol, with our great Bailan and Father Caine, I am a proud man today to see my loyal Itol in my dangerous suffering," and he then asked Itol who the strong man who beat him and buried him in the ground. Miel replied that it was a man from Caion, but I killed him for your revenge. Miel said to Trampol, "Trampol, Trampol, for your sake come here and I will give you more strength and power by tying this rope around you." Trampol said, "I will do whatever you wish of me." So Miel tied Trampol up and said to him, "The strongest power of my rope will be with you forever, you and some of your men are only too willing to tie up other people up in this world." Trampol then remarked to the prophet, "I am able to tie up the prophet Miel, too," but then he added, "Only he is very strong, and I am not sure whether I could or not." Miel said, "There is no one willing to beat the rope," and with that he started walking back to Caion.

It was during this walk that Miel questioned Trampol about the many things he had done for Itol's sake. Trampol, thinking Miel was Itol, boastingly bragged of the many things he had accomplished, "I did a whole lot, I build many temples, I dug many crouths, I gathered a malifia circle, and I had many witches who ruined all the Nile people, but I had to surrender this great power to Miel, the great prophet of

Ape, so for that reason was turned over to Caion. I captured many men and put them to work as slaves, and my witches destroyed many children of Caion, but I have taken good care of the walnut tree, and I will show everything to you, then you will be greatly surprised.”

When Trampol arrived at the slave’s field, he said to Miel, “These are all my slaves, all must work and produce the food from the land of my people,” and he then ordered his guards to whip the slaves, and the guards started doing as they were told. But when the prophet saw the brutality of the guards, he grabbed two of them, and threw them into the sea, saying to them as he done so, “When your great Itol came over to see the slaves I did not want to see any whipping, because it is against my willing. I want all the slaves to line up in two long lines so that I may investigate them, and I want the guards depart for Cainon while I take care of the slaves for Trampol’s sake.”

Trampol ordered the guards back to Cainon as Itol had commanded and instructed them to tell the people in camp all the news about Bailan, Itol, and Caine being with him. Then Trampol ordered the slaves to divide into two lines for Itol’s review. After this was accomplished it was very late, so Miel said to Trampol, “Trampol, Trampol, as it is very late I am going place you back in the earth, so that your power will multiply.’ When that Miel opened the earth and buried the giant Trampol up to his chest and then ordered Aldoman with the two other men to stay with him while he and Giacovino went to review the slaves. Miel walked between the two long lines and some of the slaves recognized Miel, so he said to them, “Courage brothers, I come for your freedom, I will free all of you and destroy the Cainon malifia.”

Miel, with Giacobino, slept with all the slaves, and at mid-night God Father came down to the earth to see his prophet and assure himself that Miel would save the slaves. Miel made a great river which he called Nile, and then made another from the great pirament and he called it the Cainon Sea. God Father advised him of the danger that was before him and said, "Miel, Miel, be very careful in the mystery of the land of Cainon, the malifia are so strong that any man going there will be magnetized like a stone, and I caution you to be very careful. I am afraid to have you go to that mystery land." But Miel replied, "Oh you Celestial Father, when I obey your commands I am not afraid of any danger, and I will do all my sacrifices for your sake."

It was only a short time have the departure of Miel that the news spread around the world that he was going to destroy all the malifica of the Cainon. When the young men, who volunteered from Ape, passed through to Caiol and told the people of the danger the prophet Miel had had with the giant Trampol, they immediately armed all the men to help Miel. So they departed for Nile and expressed the news to them. At once the Nile people were called to arms and joined the Caiol people to give their help to the prophet Miel. All the voluntary from Ape passed through Aiel, and told the news to King Anat and his people, and Anat immediately united all his men from ten to sixty years of age and departed to give Miel their help. So the whole world was now on their way to aid Miel against the giant Trampol.

God Father did not depart from the earth, but stayed on to give any help that the prophet Miel might need. In the morning Miel ordered his brother Giacobino to stay with the slaves until he saw the first lightning strike, and as soon as they saw that they were to go over to Cainon, armed with

the stick to defend their enemy.

Miel returned to Trampol and pulled him out of the earth and said to him, "You are going to see all the work that you have done for my sake."

When Miel returned to Cainon, all the men and witches crowded around him with great respect and gave him a great welcome. Trampol said to his people, "Courage, we now have our Itol, Caine and the Bailan and I will tie up all the world with this rope which Itol has given to me." And he took Miel to see his many temples, but Miel did not like any of them, and with his left foot knocked them all down. Trampol then took Miel to see all the crouths, but Miel said, "I don't like underground, you did not build them right," and he tapped the ground with his left foot and caved them all in, and they soon filled with dirt and water. Trampol took Miel to see the big walnut tree wand said to him, "Itol this is the tree you planted for power's sake of the witches, I have developed many witches under this tree to ruin the children of the other countries." Miel then said, "This is the one that cannot be better, I like this tree, it is wonderful, this tree is worth all the world." Miel then let one of his two men climb up into the tree to let the rope come down through its branches, and as he took hold of the other end of the rope he said to the giant Trampol, "Trampol, how much harm have you done in the world for my sake," and the giant replied "I have done so much harm that I cannot remember all of it." So Miel said to him, "You have done so much that I will only do one and pay for all," and he pulled the rope around Trampol's neck and hung him from the tree."

When all of Trampol's men and witches saw their king hanging on the tree they tied to assault Miel, but he said to them, "I promised this to Trampol in the land of the Nile

fifteen years ago, and I have not failed my promise.” And the prophet called the earth for his protection and at once there came a great earthquake with storm and wind and a great cyclone that beat the Trampol men and witches down.

God Father was with Giacovino all this time, and the Caiol and Nile men were in Cainon at the divided line, but God flew over the earth and ordered them not to cross the line until he commanded Aldoman. All the voluntary men from Ape were with Giacovino in the camp and God Father flew from one camp to the other to protect his people. God Father did not think that Miel was strong enough to destroy all of the Cainon malifica, so He was there to have all his Celestial power to prepare for Miel’s defense. When Miel had the rope in his hands he said to Trampol, “How about the damage you did to the people?” and Trampol replied, “I cannot remember all the people I ruined.” Then Miel said to him, “I will do only one for you to cover all that you did for other people.” God Father heard of this and he whispered to Miel that he was waiting to help him should the occasion arise. When Miel spoke his word he said, “This is my promise. I gave you on the Nile land.” The lightning split the tree and burned the giant Trampol at the same time.

When God Father saw the lightning he ordered the wind and storm to help Miel, and told Giacovino to advance with all his men. Giacovino, with the Ape men and slaves advanced to beat the Cainon people but they were weak from the storm and earthquake. Giacovino hollered to his men to assault the enemy. The Ape men carried canes and started a great assault against the people of the Cainon and they were saved because Miel had broken the malifica and the witchery. All the Cainon land was covered with the blood and bodies of their dead.

God Father flew to the Nile front and said to the people, "Advance, Advance, at once and have good courage because the prophet Miel has broken all the malifica and witchery of the Cainon and you can walk safely in this mystery land."

When Giacovino with all his voluntary men from Ape and all the slaves arrived in Cainon land God Father cried to all, "Destroy the Bailan with his people, destroy all the enemy, free all the women and the children for my sake." When Miel went with Aldoman they saw the God Father had arrived there before Giacovino and Miel said, "Oh great Celestial Father, all the malifica of the Cainon are smashed in pieces, I destroyed the giant Trampol and all the witches, and have reported to my brothers from Ape to walk frankly in the mystery land because the malifica are no more and they can easily finish the work with their canes."

When Giacovino and his men were close to Miel, Miel stopped the earthquake, storm and wind so that the men and the slaves could start crushing the enemy with their canes. They assaulted the Cainon people with the greatest of battle and soon had made themselves heroes.

The prophet Miel, with the prophet Aldoman, were talking with God and Miel said, "Oh Celestial father, I thank you, I thank you for the power you gave me, and I did all your commandments, now the voluntary of Ape are willing to do their duty with their canes."

God Father was surprised to hear of Miel's power and said to him, "Miel, Miel, you must now rest for awhile from this great work, because you have done work that I was able to do. I am now going to the Nile front and give courage to the Nile and Caiol men, who are at the divided line, for I told them that I would soon return." God Father flew back to the Nile and Caiol people and hollered to them, "Courage,

Courage, you will follow the light and will meet the prophet Miel.” God Father kept on flying from one front to the other and encouraged the people by telling them that all of the malifica were destroyed, including the giant Trampol and the witches. God said to them, “Advance, Advance, with your canes, destroy all your enemy until you meet the large light which is above Miel’s head.”

The Caiol and the Nile people were asking who God was as it was the first time they had heard of him, God said, “I am your Celestial God Father, I am the one your prophet Miel has told you about.” When the Caiol and Nile people knew he was the God Father, whom Miel had recommended to them, they advanced very rapidly with great heroism and beat the enemies wherever they met and kept right on going to reach the great light. And God flew back to Miel, then to the men of Niles and gave courage to both sides and for seven days and seven nights God Father kept flying above the people in the mystery land of Cainon to watch his people so as to make sure they were safe from all the malifica.

Miel said to God, “Oh Celestial Father, do not worry, I will do all in my power to save your children from the malifica and witchery of the Cainon, and as Bailan is no more the people will be free before I leave them.” God said to Miel, “Miel, Miel, I have trusted all my power to your power, you do whatever is your wish, if it will please you, I will retire to my Celestial throne.”

After the seven days and seven nights God Father departed for his Celestial home and the prophet Miel remained in the earth to represent the God now above the people.

The Cainon was assaulted by the men from three countries, and they were so afraid that they surrendered

and as they suffered for nine or ten days under Celestial punishment they lost all courage. On the tenth day the Caiol and Nile people arrived to where the prophet Miel was fighting with his men, and all united together, but the enemy was all out of line, mostly dead or wounded, and not many men were left. The population left was about twenty per cent men and eighty per cent women, as the other had been destroyed from the earth, and the prophet Miel stopped the fighting and ordered all his men to take three or four day's rest. After three days, the prophets Miel, Giacovino, and Aldoman started to walk amongst their enemies and Miel said to them, "I want all of you to surrender under my wish, and I want you to throw all your fire torches in the sea, I want you to obey God's commandments and then I will pardon all of you." But the Cainon people were so weakened from their long battle that they started to cry and threw their torches into the sea as Miel had ordered, then crowded around him with their faces to the ground and prayed to Miel to forgive them and from now on they would be peaceful. So the prophet Miel gave them a great speech, saying, "Brothers, one time when I freed the Nile, your beloved king the Trampol came over on the Nile to meet me and at that time he promised under his power and in the name of God Father that he would disturb the other countries no more, I told him then that he should he fail me I would hang him to the dearest tree in his land, but he proved to be a coward and failed in his promise he gave me under the gospel of God, so I hung him from on the tree and destroyed his people with his malifica to keep my promise, and also destroyed his Bailan. Now all of you are free, I want you to be in good faith under God's command because you have heard his divine voice for seven days and seven nights

from above all his people. I will explain God's wishes to you. God don't want you to develop any malifica in his earth, don't kill, don't steal, and don't above all things disturb any of the other people, because all will come back to you. I will leave all in peace under God's command. I now depart, but I will be back soon to see what you are doing and how you are getting along, but should I find any torches, look out, I will punished all with great severity."

In the meantime Arat, king of Aiel, arrived with all his men, all were armed with canes. When he saw the prophet he said, "Oh great God of my people I came with my men to combat your enemy. I wanted to kill all your enemies with my cane," Miel said, "Anat, we are all true don't be afraid because these people are now brothers, not enemies," and he had a great laugh at Anat for what he intended to do and Anat said, "I imagined you were in danger and so I came to free you, I would die for your loyal respect, the little Anat has abandoned all the women to come and help Miel."

All the Ape men laughed at Anat because he was very small and was not larger than his cane. All started to jest him. Miel said to his men, "When I was in Aiel, Anat was after me all the time to serve me with food and insisted that I eat, and for that reason I considered him the best hearted man in Aiel and made him king, now he left all his women and came here to defend us."

In the meantime Giacovino went there. When he saw Anat he asked him, "Anat, you are here to fight?" Anat replied, "Yes, but the great God Miel said that all were brothers now, not enemies, so how can I fight." Miel smiled and said, "Anat, how many men did you take with you from your own family?" and Anat replied, "I got twenty-six men, eight are my sons, eight are my sons-in-law, and ten are

grandsons, in all there are twenty-six, and twenty-six women I left with my wife to watch the women that they did not get in the men's sight." Miel then asked him, what if the women started war with your wife. Anat said, "Oh no, my wife is a good wife and a good watcher, she will defend herself till I come back, because I am here with my men to help you."

Miel asked Anat how they could fight as some were only boys about ten years old and could hardly hold the cane to defend themselves, but Anat said, "Well if they cannot fight with canes, they can throw stones, you need all our help." The prophet said, "Anat, you make me laugh." But Anat was in a hurry to have war so he could show the prophet the ability of his men, but Miel started to laugh, he was lying on the ground and he got hold of Anat's feet and pulled him down and said, "Anat suppose a man did that to you what will you do after you are down." Anat said, "But they are not as strong as you to do that." Miel said, "Anat you are here, are you sure to find the men and women separated as when you left them?" Anat replied, "You know I have my wife with eight daughters, eight daughters-in-law and then granddaughters to watch and not let them get together." Miel said, "But Anat, are you sure it will be as you say?" but the little king only smiled and said, "We will see when we get back."

Miel rested all his men for three days and after three days gave the order to the Cainon people to listen to his words. All the people gathered around to hear Miel's speech. He said, "People of the Cainon, I will leave you alone; you can get a king the way you want; but remember, don't disturb any more of the other countries; don't work any more malice. I don't want a giant nor a witch. I want all the other people free and I want all of you in good faith with God the

Father, and to rule yourselves as the will please.”

So the prophet discharged the Nile and Caiol men in order to return home and then sent all the slaves to Caion. He, with his men of the Ape and Anat, went to Aiel to see how they were getting along there. Anat was happy because the prophet was free. When they arrived in Aiel they found all the women had started a war with Anat’s wife. They said they couldn’t be without the men. They wanted to marry for the support of their needs. They captured Anat’s wife, made her prisoner and never stopped until they passed into the men’s sight.

In the meantime Miel arrived with Anat and Miel started to laugh and said, “Anat, what did I tell you? The women get into revolution and fight your wife.” Anat said, “Bu I will fight all of them for my wife’s sake.” He ordered all of his men to fight and he went ahead of them all to meet he woman leader of the revolution. Without saying a word he struck her in the head with his cane. The poor woman fell, dizzy. So all the boys from ten to fourteen years of Anat’s soldiers started to throw stones at the women and the prophet Miel had a great laugh to see the boys have war against the women with stones.

When King Anat knew his wife was missing he went to the prophet Miel and prayed to him to get is wife back. Miel said to him, “Let me fight for awhile to win all the women without the fight.” Miel called for an earthquake to scare all the women. When the women saw the earth tremor, they remembered the prophet Miel and all were afraid and all cried and hollered for help. They prayed to Miel to help them, to stop the earth tremor, so Miel calmed the earth and said, “I want all of you women to go and get Anat’s wife and bring her to me.” The women promised to do whatever he

wished and some of the women departed to get Anat's wife, and Miel had to laugh to see the women and boys fighting and he said to Anat, "Anat, you are the King of the Aiel, but I want you to get real soldiers, not boys." Anat started to cry for he missed his wife and he said to the prophet Miel, "Oh great God, great prophet, do not let me suffer anymore without my wife, I want her because I need her." Miel said to Anat, "Anat, you are king, in case your wife is missing, you can get five or six young women and get married again, I will give my consent for you to get any one you wish." Anat turned and said to Miel, "Great prophet, do you mean what you say?" and he started to cry again. "No, no great God, I want my own because we have known each other so long, we have been married for fifty-one years and she has been very good to me. She has raised me sixteen children and we love each other very much. How can I forget her? No, no, I must have my wife, otherwise I must die because she is the best of all." Miel laughed at King Anat and he said to Giacovino, "Brother you can mention that, how strong a love and respect Anat has for his wife." Giacovino said to Anat, "Oh, Anat, do not be discouraged, do not worry, you will get your wife back soon." Anat said, "Oh dear God, it seems to me to be two hundred years since I have seen her, I cannot live without her."

At the same time the women went over to get Anat's wife and they carried her in a sitting chair and she was all bundled with flowers and green leaves and the women were singing to give enjoyment to the queen and Giacovino said to Anat, "Anat, here is your wife coming, look how bright the flowers and leaves are," but Anat did not answer he ran to his wife, so happily and called her, "Dearest, dearest, I have suffered very much for you, I thank God for your freedom but I will

have revenge on the women who harmed you,” and she said, “Anat, no, the women never harmed me, they treated me with great respect and enjoyment.” Anat turned to Miel and knelt down and kissed his feet and said, “Oh, great God, how can I thank you for what you have done for my wife and I?” Miel said to Anat, “Anat, Anat, I am not a God, I am the prophet of God, you have known me for twelve years and do not remember that I am the prophet, not the God, I am the prophet to defend all the good people and punish all the bad.” Anat said, “I know you for God, that is why I call you God, because you are the one who does everything on the earth, you are the Father of the people and my duty is to respect you the same as God. Maybe you have a God above you, but you represent our God.” Miel tapped Anat’s shoulder and said, “Anat you are a great man.”

At the same time all the unmarried women went to the prophet Miel and prayed to him to give them the privilege to get married because they did not want to stay without men and could not do the heavy work and could not produce the same as the men did. Miel said to the unmarried women, “Why after twelve years, do you want men to do all the heavy work and take care of you? Well, I will give you the privilege to get married. I will give you an extension for three days, and after three days, no more marriages. Who remains unmarried must stay unmarried forever.”

Miel gave a good speech to the unmarried women and unmarried men and said to them, “Tomorrow morning at daybreak all of you unmarried men and women must be in line to be married, but I want all of you to have a marriage in two ways: First, a marriage of duty; each couple has to go before a representative of God and swear with the full faith of your heart and soul not to fail your marriage, and to

swear the seal of your soul: Second, you must go before a representative of the law to swear in the presence of the law not to fail your marriage and be under the law's rule. This is an oath of a real marriage so any couple who swears in the presence of God or the presence of law, should think this over first because the swearing is one and cannot be annulled."

So the prophet Miel ordered the prophets Giacovino and Aldoman to be with them as representatives of God, and ordered King Anat to be the leader of the law and he can take as many as he wants to help him and anyone who is a representative of the law they will all be the same, it all means law.

King Anat had a long cane to represent the law and he marked each marriage on his cane with a knife. In the evening he made eight more canes and gave these to his sons and told them to be ready for Miel's orders; to unite all the unmarried people the next morning.

All the unmarried men and women were not to remain without marriage and all tried to be first in line at daybreak. At daybreak when the sun came up Miel ordered the marriage time to open and the women went over to the men's side in a hurry and the men went over to the women's side in a hurry and they did not pay attention whether the women were twenty-five or the men seventy, or if the men were twenty-five and the women seventy. It did not matter any difference to them as long as they could get married. They grabbed each other and went to the three prophets to have the duty marriage and repealed the law marriage.

King Anat with the eight sons, made nine men to represent the law to serve all unmarried people. The three prophets were the representatives of god to serve

the people and celebrate the marriage of the unmarried people under the duty of God, and Anat with eight men, with long canes in their hands united each couple and put a mark on their cane to denote one lawful marriage. In this hurry-up marriage during two and a half days the three prophets had celebrated one thousand, four hundred and ninety marriages. King Anat and the sons had made one thousand four hundred and ninety marks on their canes for the marriages by the law, so the married people began from twenty-seven to seventy-eight year of age and after they were married they were very pleased and thanked the prophet Miel for the privilege that he gave them to be united as man and wife.

After three or four days, they were all married and the prophet Miel gave a great speech to all the brides by themselves and he said to him, "For nearly three hundred years all you women have been ruling the laws of Aiel by your wishes and your law said that the women should not marry, should not lose her mind with man; why in twelve years are you all changed? All of you want a man because you learn what a man is worth." The women answered the prophet Miel, "For twelve years we have been suffering and doing hard work, we have been doing all the work ourselves, we did not have any pleasure or enjoyment." Miel said to the women, "Wouldn't it have been better to get married when you were young and not have a false law to keep all the men as slaves? If you were married in your younger days you would not have suffered these twelve years without men. Never hold a man as a slave because God will always help his men and let all the women suffer. God wants all the men to rule the earth and have the law in their hands, he wants the men to respect the women, but

the women must obey the men and recompense the men with their love. The man must be the woman's support, and if he doesn't get love from the woman he does not have to support her because one man and one woman represent one family, but for twelve years one thousand four hundred and ninety women have not represented anything, but today all represent one thousand four hundred and ninety families, because you all have men, and I want all of you to take good care of your men, this is your chance and if any woman separates from her husband, they must be without another forever. God will take a man away from you and you will be without man's control and without man's support." All the women were crying and thought Miel was going to take their men away from them and all promised Miel to have the greatest respect and would always be willing to obey the commandment of God. Miel walked away from the women and he went over to the men to give them a great speech, separate from the women.

He said to them, "Brothers, I want to know how you have been getting along for twelve years without the women?" and the men answered Miel: "We have all been doing the work and have been very lonesome without the women to comfort us and without children and their love." Miel said to them, "When I was here twelve years ago, all of you had your minds set against the women and all of you told me the women were no good, all of you said the women were temptation and today all of you are glad to have a woman, but these are the same women that were here twelve years ago but how many women are willing to love and produce the children and obey a man's command, but some of the women worked in order not to have a man, but lots of men in order to look at the women, but I want you to listen to

God's commandment and to put on your soul my word. God says, 'that the man must rule the women,' the man is the protector of the family and must respect his children and a man must do his duty to keep a woman under his control and the man must master the woman as he wishes lots of times it is not the women's fault if the women are not mastered under the man's wishes. And if the women do not get the man's respect and the man's duty how can a woman love a man? You are the one who has the control of the women; to keep her close to you and not let her away from you, you are the one who must respect the women, you are the one who must defend the woman in order to get the love, peace and harmony with your woman and children and you can generate your own blood and flesh and your blood and flesh will be proud with you on the earth. Look at your King Anat, he has been married for fifty-one years and his wife raised for him sixteen children and they have been in peace and when he came over to the Cainon to help me, he had with him twenty-six men from his own flesh and blood. All were willing to defend Anat to risk his life for Anat's sake, and look at all the other families with Anat, they are just as happy as he is. If you had a family you can be just as happy with them, now all of you are married, but how many of you will not have children because it is too late? If you were married a long time ago you could have many children and could have re-populated the Aiel land. Don't cancel my word in your heart, if you do, you will cancel the children away from you."

So Miel united the men and women and gave them to understand what it meant to be married and to have children and to be under God's commandment, not to annul the marriage and anyone should not annul the marriage or

disobey God's commandment and law of the earth, I want you to be all under the King's law so the King will respect all of you and you will always defend your enemies because I cannot stay with you all the time, I am going away soon.

When the people of Aiel heard Miel was leaving, all cried and gathered around him and begged him not to leave, but Miel promised on his return he would stay in Aiel for a long time. Miel called King Anat and said to him, "Anat I want you to respect your people and let them be under your law, if, in your case they won't obey you, call me in the sky, I will come over and help you."

The three prophets departed from Aiel to Caion. When they arrived in Caion all the people were surprised to see them and gave them a great welcome. Miel stayed three or four days and decided to leave, but the people wanted him to be their king and did not want him to leave, but Miel said, "Brothers I cannot be your king, because I am a prophet, my duty is to travel the world and teach the commandments of God to everybody, to help people the same, in the way anyone who needs my help I must defend him. I have to serve the command of God, I must take all the evil away from the earth, and clear all the humanity, so I will be back to you again. Then I will stay longer."

The three prophets departed from Caion to Afra to see what the colored people were doing, but the Caion people followed them for three days singing, playing for the enjoyment of the three prophets.

After three days they arrived in lake Tango. The three prophets passed on the other side of the lake, the Caion people remained on their side of the lake and waited until the three prophets came back, but Miel took a long time before he returned, but the Caion people did not move away

from the like, they were willing to starve instead of departing from there. They made their living with the fish, but the fish were very scarce there and a good many people were eating grass and the bark of the trees.

When Miel and his company arrived in Afra all the colored people ran away from them and hollered and were afraid that the prophet Miel was going to hurt them, but Miel made a sign for them not to be afraid, they calmed themselves and crowded around him and he was surprised that he had found something new in Afra, for the first time he went over there the colored people would not talk to him, and the second time he went over he found out that the colored people were talking like the other people. They were learning to speak from a deserted man from Caion.

The lodge man with the beard was discharged by Miel for the false laws he kept above the people, but Miel wanted to recompense the people from Caion for what they had been teaching the colored people so he called them to him and gave them a great speech.

Miel said to them, "Brothers from Caion I will free you from Afra, and I will send all of you back to your own land with your own people, but I want you to behave yourselves and not teach the people anything bad or keep any slaves."

So all the people went back to Caion and Miel, with the other prophets, remained in Afra for over two months. They had real enjoyment watching the colored people cultivating the land and all of them sued to play to keep Miel enjoying himself. At that time the colored people never cooked their meals, they ate everything raw so the three prophets tried to teach them how to cook their foods, but the colored people did not pay any attention to their teachings.

After two months Miel decided to leave but the colored

people did not want him to go, they wanted him to stay with them, but he said to them, "Brothers, I taught you the commandments of God, and how to take care of yourselves and taught you all to obey the law and how represent the law and taught you to be under God's command and to have faith." Miel picked all the smart men and gave them a great speech. Miel said to them, "Brothers, when I was here twelve years ago we could not understand each other because you did not know hot speak, but we understand each other by signs with our hands, now we can understand each other because you speak like I do. You can talk with the people from the other countries but I want you to have good faith with God and to have respect for the law, so God will help you in any trouble."

Miel elected a king of the colored people and a representative of God and he said to the king, "You are the king to rule the people under your law, and you must respect everybody the same, let everyone obey you," and Miel called the representative of God and said to him, "You are the representative of God in the earth of all the colored people and you must keep all in good faith. Do not fail the commandment of God, if you do, you will lose God Father forever and do like the rest of the countries. All should do their duty because I am going to leave but I will be back sometime to see you again." Miel departed from Afra to go into Caion and the colored people followed him and cried to him not to depart. When they arrived on the Lake Tango the three prophets crossed the lake and the colored people remained crying on the Afra side.

Miel found all the Caion men waiting for him by the lake, and when they saw him they gave him a great welcome, and Miel, to please everyone, gave a great speech to all the men

who were free from Afra, and asked them how they were getting along and what had happened for twelve years. They said that they could not get along very good because they were better with their own people. Miel said to them, “You know your own is always the best. Why did you not respect the law when you had a commander with the beard under the lodge? If you were going to take care of your own people I would not have sent you over to the colored people for twelve years. If you try to confuse the mind of your people again I will take all of you lazy people out forever.”

But the Caion men swore to Miel that they would not do that any more and they promised him to respect each other. All the Caion people were in the Lake Tango for over two months and they made their livelihood by fishing because they did not have anything else. They were willing to die rather than to stay away from the prophet Miel and when they saw him they started to holler, “He is our God; he is the God over all the Caion people. He will come with us.” But Miel said to them, “Brothers, I tell you you must go back to Caion. You must not wait for me. I will just pass in Caion because I must got back to Ape to my people. I have not seen them for a long time.”

But the Caion people begged Miel to remain in Caion with them and represent their king. Miel said to them, “Brothers, I am not the king. I am the prophet; I must go and see everybody; I must visit every country. I will be back sometime to visit you.” In the meantime, the colored people passed across the lake and they heard Miel talking with the Caion people and the king of the colored people went to Miel and said to him: “Oh you God of the people. If you are going to remain in Caion we want you to be with us in Afra because we are willing to respect you more than

any other country. We have more privilege to have you for our king than anyone because we are a different color.” Miel said to the king of the colored people, “Brothers, it doesn’t make any difference; white or colored, they are all the same. They are all sons of God and God respects every one of you as his child, but he wants everybody to obey his commandments because the commandments of God are the light of the people and take all the reports from the people of the earth to God and we are between the earth and the celestial commandments. We must obey them to be the sons of God. Even to the celestial command they are from a different color.” God the Father said to them, “You are all my children, all have as much privilege as the other and we are the sons of God at the celestial command. We all belong to God like a celestial command and we all have to respect and keep our faith with God to be his real children. I have to go to see my people in Ape because they have the privilege to see me just as much as anyone. I want the colored people to go back to Afra where they belong and I want the Caion people to go back to the Caion land and I will come back soon to see you and I expect to find all of you in good faith so we can enjoy being together.”

The prophet Miel said good-bye to all and departed for his return to Ape, but the colored people followed him for three days and three nights and they said they wanted another representative over them. So Miel turned to one man, the same one he had left as a representative of God, and said to him, “Menet, you are representative of God and also mine. If you represent God, you also represent the prophet Miel. If you need any help you can pick anyone who will please you and you will be together with the king to rule all the colored people. Let all of them obey your word

the same as the law. Let them respect each other under my name. If anyone disobeys the representative of God or the king they should be punished with the severity of the law. Because if anybody obeys the law they will never have any trouble. I don't want any killing or any stealing and each man must provide food for his family and in the marriage affair man or woman should be united two by two and to be of one family, one man and one woman, they must be united in marriage. The marriage must be sworn in the presence of a representative of God and the representative of the law. This is sworn as a seal of your soul and should not fail because it cannot be sworn but only once. In case they separate, one of the other, should not get married again with a different one because a second marriage is not real of a duty and is not real of a law, you will be married without the law or the duty. If all of you keep your promise under God's willing and the law, God will give it to you for all time and all of you will be peaceful with your family and the earth you work will produce the greatest quantity of food." Miel gave a last good-bye and promised to come back and see them soon, but in the meantime the Caion men were all crying and crowded around the three prophets and kneeled down to them and said, "Oh God of the Caion people, we bring you great news, you must come back with us in Caion because some strangers arrived there and await for you. There are two women with their children. One of the women says she is your mother and the youngest one says she is your wife and the children say they are your sons. They all came after you but they are now waiting in Caion for you to come back."

When Miel heard the news about his family he went back to Caion in a hurry and there found his wife and mother

with the two children. They were waiting for him. He was surprised to see his own family after him and he was so surprised and so very glad to see his children, and all the women of Caion took the best of care of the prophet Miel's family and mother. Miel asked his family why they were after him, what was wrong in Ape and the mother and wife answered, "We heard of the great work you have done and it gave us the greatest impression that we could not stand it any longer without seeing you. We had to come over to congratulate you in your victory you had won over the other countries." Miel was so glad to see his family and to see how the Caion women were treating them that he forgot to return in a hurry but remained there for a long time. After he gave his speech to the people, for over three months, he taught them all the God divine word, and told them not to disobey God's command. Be in peace with their family. Miel gave three of the most important commandments: (1) Don't disobey God, if you don't want to be punished with celestial castity. (2) Don't do what is not wanted if you hurt, the others will come to you. (3) Respect and defend the women if you wish their love and respect.

Miel said if you keep these commandments on your soul you will have peace, happiness and security and be respected by all. After Miel taught all the people he gave them a last good-bye. He then took his family and departed for Ape to return to his people. He passed through the forest so the people of Aiel would not see him, so that would not have to tarry any longer.

When Miel, with his family, Giacovino, Aldoman and six men from the Ape, were in the center of the forest, all the lions, tigers, and bears accompanied them. Miel played with them like they had been raised together, he played with

them for over ten days, until he arrived in Ape. When he arrived the animals remained in the forest and the prophet Miel, with his company and his family, went to his old home. The people of Ape crowded around him to salute their great prophet. Miel saluted them with great respect. The people gave to him a great first lighting, many big fires for enjoyment to represent the light of the Ape people. The three prophets remained in Ape for over one year.

The prophet Miel made the Giasten River, which is called today the Giorden River. He made that so as to have his people close, and not to be disturbed by the other countries. The Giordan River was between the Caiol and the Ape. After made the river be, with prophet Aldoman, went to discover what was on the west side of the Ape. They passed three mountains. The climate was good and the soil rich. Miel said to Aldoman, "This place has ten times more land than Ape." They discovered the real land, so when they returned to ape and explained to the people all about the great land on the otherside of the three mountains. Miel named the new land Appenine Centeron, which means the center of the mountain.

When prophet Miel returned home he more impressions. His wife gave birth to twins, a son and a daughter. Miel named the boy Centeron and the girl Appenine in honor of the new land. The prophet Miel was very happy with his four children and thanked god for his children's sake.

After Miel recommended his brother Giacovino to take good care of his family, he retired to the forest with Aldoman. They took with them a piece of lining cloth and with his own blood made a map of the land. He brought the map to his people and said to them, "In case the people of Ape, after I die, are disturbed they should get the map and

go to my new land. This land is rich for everything and will be a good hiding place. Between the mountains nobody will discover you. If anyone disturbs my good people I will destroy all the enemy. This new hiding place I leave my willing to be saved for all women and children, in case the other countries will unite against my people take the women and children there. I want you to keep this a secret, don't let the other people know about it, for if they know they will arrive there before you do. I discovered this for your benefit and I will depart soon for my duty, but I leave my brother Giacovino to take care of you.

After the prophet Miel had completed his arrangements he called his brother and said to him, "Brother, I leave you with my family, I and Aldoman will leave for the name of God on our trip above the other country to see what the people there are doing." The people of Ape united around the prophet and the younger men wanted to go with him, but he said, "No brothers, Aldoman and I will go alone, you all remain here with my brother, he'll be your father." He turned to his brother and said, "Our three prophets will be separated but any time anyone of us need help a big star will come above and bleed into the earth. When this star comes out we will go there to help the needy." He kissed his family good-bye and bidding good-bye to his people he and Aldoman departed for Caiol.

## THE TWO PROPHETS DEPART THE THIRD TIME TO OBEY GOD'S COMMAND

The two prophets departed for third time for order of God Father to travel around the people that were at that time in the world. The first stop was made in Caiol, there they found the people in good faith with God and the law. When the people of Caiol saw the prophet Miel they were very glad and gave him a great welcome, offering him all that they had, but Miel thanked them and said, "I don't want anything from you, but I do want you to remain in respect and duty with God Father and obey the law."

Miel and Aldoman remained in Caiol for about two months and gave to the people many good speeches, then they departed for Nile. When they arrived in Nile the people showed great surprised to see the prophet, their defender, they called Miel the God of the people. Miel reminded the command of God to the people of the Nile. All the people crowded around him and enjoyed themselves with singing. They kneeled down to kiss the feet of the prophet and Aldoman but Miel stopped them, saying, "I don't want to see

you face the ground, I want you above so you can see God. Remember all the commands of God. I want all of you in the name God to remain in good faith.” The people asked Miel, “What is our duty not to offend God and Miel, and what they should do in order to be close to them.” Miel answered, “Brothers, I will explain the duty so you will not offend God Father and to be in peace.

(1) “Respect God with entire soul because He is the only supreme celestial Father.

(2) “Don’t do any act against his willing to develop the Cainon malifica.

(3) “Don’t abuse or disturb the peace of the women and children of others.

(4) “Don’t steal and don’t kill, if you do, the sins and evil will come on you or some other descendants. Earn your own living with your strength, you’ll get good results when you eat. Help the poor for name of God, they will return to you or your descendants and all be in peace.

(5) “Don’t disobey the law or be cowardly and low, if you do the law won’t defend you. If all of you do what I say there won’t be no war, no slaver, no trouble, no God castigation in your land. We are all the same, we are all sons of our first father Adam, and God will respect all his children and recompense with health and happiness, and the land will produce many kinds of fruit. God Father has a great reward for all the people that ware willing to obey his celestial word.”

The people said, “We will do all God wishes but you must stay with us forever and teach us how God Father made his first child and the duties we should do.” Miel said, “Brothers. I will explain to you all about God Father, when He created the Sun his duty was to warm the earth, and the

earth produced the fruit. Second, God created Eldom to have him take care of the earth and to create all the animals. The animals we see today were created by Eldom. The Moon was created by God to be transmission of the light of the earth. Lunerio was created by the moon to report from the earth to the moon and the moon to the celestial. Domins was created by God to dominate and judge the others. Mars was created by God Father to help Domins to punish or defend. Mercurio was created by God Father to protect the Moon and help Lunerio to control the weather and help the earth. Giov was created by God to report all the news from God to the celestial commandment. Venus was created by God to serve his comfort Eternity. Saturn was created by God Father to keep all the secrets of the celestial commandments and to report to the God. Every thirty-nine years they have all united his secrets and gave to Giov and Giov reported all to the Celestial Father. This is the tenth Celestial child of God Father and all these ten are the commanders of God. God gave them the privilege to rule the earth and whatever is on it. Eldom created out first father Adam with the Delphen fish. In that time Eldom was the owner of the earth and the Delphen fish was the king of the sea and all the fish in the sea. Adam had the privilege to stay on the earth just as much as Eldom. Adam represented the son of God just as same as Eldom and all the other celestial commands. When God Father took Eldom away from the earth, Adam remained the owner of the earth and generated all the children to repopulate God's earth. We are all descendants of Adam. We are in the earth for the name of God willing of eternity and to generate of Adam and Eve and we are the sons of God just the same as Adam. Adam has been severing God's command and we must serve just

the same as he did. If we respect the ten Celestial commands God will have a great reward for all of us.

“The Cainon Bailan is nothing to confuse the people’s mind to not obey God Father commandment. This Bailan is a descendant from a snake and never agrees with God Father and the earth. They want to be by themselves. The snake was discharged from the water and tried to rule the earth with the Bailan but the commandment of the God said to stay away from the Bailan because he was a descendant from a snake. If you obey the Bailan, you will not be peaceful. God Father destroyed all the people with the Celestial power. The Celestial power punished the people on the earth with starvation and a storm, flood and earthquake. If all the people will obey the commandments of God they will not suffer the punishment, so I want all of you to be away from the Bailan of Cainon.”

The Nile people were surprised to hear Miel speak and all promised him to do what the commandments of God said. In the meantime the prophet was talking with the people, and one real old woman went to him and kneeled down with tears in her eyes, kissed the prophet’s feet and said to him, “Oh great father of the earth tell me about my son. Is he living or dead? I haven’t heard from him since his birth.” The prophet Miel looked at the old woman and asked her what is your child’s name? The old lady answered, “His name is Aldo, I am a descendant from the fisher people of Caiol, my husband was the commander of the fisher camp. One day the Cainon people came over to the camp and killed my husband and took me with them into Cainon. When I gave birth to the child I made a mark on him, on his left shoulder, but the Cainon people took the child away from me and tied him on a log and threw him into the sea, so

after that I never heard from my child any more. I do not know whether he drowned or was saved. I wish you could tell me what happened to him.” Miel said to the old woman, “Stand up Mother, you will see your son and you will be surprised what a proud man he is. You are the mother of a great prophet, for he has been serving the commandments of God with me for a long time. God has been taking good care of your son, and has given you strength to see your child and to congratulate him. On your oldest age to be with him and the surprise for servant he did give to God people of the world but we are all saved for the willing Father. We have been traveling together about the power of God. The power and strength of God Father’s wishes has been taking care of your son so that you two would meet some day, and today is the wish of God fulfilled for you will meet your son. You will be surprised to see how proud you will be that he is under the God commandment.” Miel turned to the Nile people and ordered them to go after the prophet Aldoman. Aldoman was on the other side of the Nile giving a speech to the people, but as soon as he got the call from Miel he went to him. When he arrived Miel grabbed him by the hand and said to him, “Brother Aldoman, you remember the word God gave you in the forest when I drew a map for the new land and he promised you that you would soon meet your Mother. Now you will prove God’s word, you will be surprised, you will meet your mother.” The prophet Miel called the old woman and said, “Come over Mother, you will meet your greatest son, he has been looking for you for a long time,” and continuing he said, “Aldoman, Aldoman this is your mother whom God promised you would meet.” He turned to Aldoman and pulled his shirt and said, “This is your son’s mark.” The old woman fell down and did not

answer for quite awhile and was surprised and Miel said to Aldoman, "Brother, today you are sure you know your Mother, you know whom you are the son of. She thought you were dead but today both of you will be together with the wish of God and know what He did for the prophet Aldoman and his mother. After so many years have passed the Mother and son for the name of God have met together and know each other as mother and son." Miel spoke to the Nile people for the benefit of the Mother and Aldoman. He said to them, "Brothers, I want all of you to be surprised of the recompense the prophet has received for the service to God." The prophet Aldoman and his Mother both fainted three times but Miel picked them up and said to them, "Aldoman, Aldoman, do not be heartbroken, pray to God and thank him for what He did for you." Aldoman took his mother and said to her, "Mother you pray with me, we both must thank God Father for the Garden He gave us to meet together to enjoy in our old age and God will help us forever."

The mother and son were very happy and enthused to be together, they separated from the crowd and prayed God for his reward. The prophet Aldoman said, "Oh you only Father, only Guardian, only Life, you defended me in so many dangerous circumstances. You sent the greatest prophet Miel after me, you gave me strength to be with him and free all the people. Now you gave my Mother and I the opportunity to meet together. How can I thank you for your mercy? You only Celestial Father I am your child, I have been serving your commandment but there is not anything that interfered with my Mother and I."

But, before the prophet Aldoman was through with his prayers God Father showed up to him and said, "Aldoman,

Aldoman, do not be surprised for what I have done, I am willing to do all for you and any prophet, I promised you in the forest that you would meet your Mother, but you were undecided and said it was impossible, but there is nothing as strong as my willing power My word is one and never fails. Whatever I promised my prophets, must be and belongs to them, or any man or woman who obeys my commandments and loves me with his heart and soul, I am with him forever. I will help in any danger. Every way, every time, I am with him. Aldoman, Aldoman, I want you to remain with your mother to enjoy with her in her last days and my power is so great no one can pass ahead of my willing to do whatever I wish. I will do my best for my good fatality child and all the people are under my gospel. I won't forget who does whatever I wish."

In the meantime the prophet Miel arrived where the prophet and his mother were and he saw God Father was talking to the prophet Aldoman. Miel said to God Father, "Oh Loyalty Celestial Father I was with the prophet Aldoman and I remember the words you promised him when I was drawing the map with my own blood in the forest." God Father turned to Miel and said to him, "Miel, Miel, now I want Aldoman to remain with his mother and you must travel alone and I will be with you, I am willing to do whatever you wish." God Father gave the order to the prophet and went back to his Celestial throne and the prophet Miel gave his last speech to the Nile people. First he spoke with prophet Aldoman and said to him, "Brother, we will be separated, I will leave you for the name of God, but I leave you with your Mother and I want you to teach your people of the Nile to obey the commandments of God and remember that if anyone of us three prophets will need help

and will see the star above then we should know that one is in need of help. I must travel alone because this is the wish of God Father and we must all obey the command. I will finish my trip alone amongst the people and you remain the father of the Nile people. Let all be under your word and if in case they disobey you call three stars and I will come and help you.”

Prophet Miel turned to the Nile people and said to them, “Brothers and Sisters I will leave you, but the prophet Aldoman represents your Father, I want all of you to obey his word and the command of God.” The prophet Miel gave his last good-bye to all and departed for Cainon. But the prophet Aldoman was very unhappy to be separated from the prophet Miel and he accompanied Miel until they arrived on the Cainon land and then the prophet Aldoman cried and was heart broken to be separated from Miel. He started to pray God Father and said, “Oh Great Father, I wish you would give me your great Mercy to let me go with Miel, I cannot stay without him, I don’t want him to go alone to a mystery land.” But God’s word answered him and said, “Aldoman, Aldoman, these are the circumstances of you and Miel and I want you to do whatever I say. You return to Nile with your mother to please her enjoyment for what she has suffered, I will be with Miel and my power is great to help all m prophets.”

The prophet Aldoman obeyed God’s command and returned to Nile with his mother, but all were discouraged without the prophet Miel. But the prophet Miel remained in the mystery land unhappy. Discourage on his way to Cainon, he walked about three hours and laid down thinking and worrying and he said to himself, “This is the recompense to the prophet on earth, in my old age, being alone in

Cainon land without my family, without my people. Oh God I wish I had a lion with me to enjoy myself with him.” God said, “Miel! Miel! Courage, courage, I am with you.” With this encouragement from God Miel got up and started to walk again.

When the people of Cainon saw Miel they ran from him. They thought he was going to harm them, but the prophet Miel called them and said, “Brothers, don’t be afraid I won’t harm you I came here for a visit, come close to me we will be friends. I will give you a speech for your own good.”

So the people of Cainon calmed and all crowded around Miel, they were willing to hear his words, all laid down their face to the ground to show the prophet Miel the respect they had for him. The prophet Miel said to them, “Brothers and Sisters I don’t want you to put your faces on the ground, it is not necessary, I want all of you to look at the sky above to see our God Father, I won’t harm you, I will remain with you for a long time, I want you all to be in good faith with me and obey God’s command to respect other people same as yourself, if you have no faith in me I will leave soon, and you won’t see me any more.” But the people were willing to do anything Miel said, they cried so that Miel would not leave them, and said to him, “All Great Terror, Great God don’t depart from us, we need you to each us to become your good people because we don’t know what to do. We never had any man to teach us how to love God and do what is right, we are willing to turn different and be with you and God, you will find out that we will be your best fidelity people, but do not depart from us you will break our hearts.”

The prophet Miel was surprised to see the great change in the Cainon people. Miel said to them, “Brothers and Sisters, I’m surprised and glad to stay with you, I will remain

with you for a long time, but not forever, because I must return to my family in Ape, but I will visit all the people first, then go back home, a man's duty is to see his child before he dies."

The prophet Miel remained in the mystery land of the Cainon, he had a great reward to teach the people what were their duties to respect God's command.

The prophet Aldoman was with his mother with the Nile people, he was worried about the prophet Miel because Miel was alone in the mystery land of Cainon. The prophet Aldoman prayed to God to give him the privilege to go over with the prophet Miel because he was alone in his old age and he wanted an opportunity to get together with Miel. "Oh God how I will thank you if you will let me go with thy brother Miel," but before Aldoman was through praying to God he heard God's words being spoken to him, "Aldoman, Aldoman, don't worry about Miel, because I am with him and I help all my dearest prophets. I did promise that when you meet your mother you had to stay with her to keep her happy in her old age. You will meet Miel again and stay with him forever."

The Cainon people were so happy to have prophet Miel with them, but Miel was unhappy, discouraged, alone with the Cainon people and to be without his brother Giacovino and Aldoman, but God went back to see the great prophet Miel and said to him, "Miel, Miel, don't worry because when I see you unhappy you break my heart." Miel looked above and said, "Oh Celestial Father, how can I be happy in my old age to be alone in this mysterious land, this will cost me some sacrifice for the liberty of the people and the freedom of the children. I wish to have my brother Giacovino with me to be more happy but I don't want to take him away

from my family in Ape, I want him to represent the Father above all the Ape people.” God said to Miel, “Miel, Miel, you ought to be proud to be on this land, it will cost you so much to sacrifice to take Bailan away from the earth, and you ought to be happy to see all these people crowd around you under my command. I want you to feel proud to see all the people free from Bailan abuse. They are so good to you, just as good as the Ape people. I am with you all the time but I do not want to see you worrying and broken hearted under my gospel.”

Miel said to God, “Oh Celestial Father I am willing to do all for your sake, I will have my last trip around the people, but I will stay a long time in here because they won’t see me any more when I depart. This is the last trip I make around the world, after I return to my people I will not any more strength to walk.” God answered Miel, “Miel, Miel, I don’t want you to get discouraged, be proud of traveling alone in your old age around all the people on the earth, to see all the people you have freed and they are all under my command, I’m with you all the time.”

The prophet Miel, to obey God realized courage to stay in the mystery land over three years with the people of Cainon. The people were all with Miel and did what Miel wished them to do, they crowded around Miel and rendered all their services. They respected Miel just as much as they did God. The people of Cainon didn’t know who God was or Miel. They have respected them the same. After three years Miel began to tell the people he was going to leave and go to Caion but the people of Cainon began to cry they won’t stay without him. Miel, to calm the people of Cainon said, “Brothers I will be back soon to see you again.” Miel elected a king to govern all the Cainon people. He called a man by

the name of Hamons. Hamons was the most intelligent man in Cainon. Miel said to him, "Hamons, you represent the law amongst your people and respect all the same, but let all obey your law." Miel called a man by name of Adol. Adol was a man unmarried, he was about forty-five years old. Miel said to him, "Adol you are the one who know more about all the commandments of God Father. You're going to be the representative amongst the people in Cainon. I want you to do the same as I did with you." Miel decided to depart from Cainon and asked two men to accompany him to Caion, but they all wanted to go with him, therefore the King himself offered Miel his company, but Miel said to him, "Brother, don't leave your people because you represent the Father, and the law, so stay with your people."

The King Hamons selected twelve men from his people and gave to them all the provisions they needed and sent them with Miel the prophet. Miel gave his last farewell to all and departed for Caion. The King with the representative Adol built a temple for the remembrance of Miel and named this temple, "The House of Prophet Miel and the commandment of God-Father" So he began to do the same as he did.

When Miel arrived in Caion he found that the people had forgotten his commandments. The prophet Miel had found the Caion men not at work. The Caion men went to Afra with some old rags. They sewed many pieces together and going to the King they said to him, "We are the representatives of the prophet Miel he sent you this gift, but he needs some of your men," so the colored king for Miel said, "Give to the Caion men as many men as they want and bring them in Caion to let them do all the work." But when the prophet Miel knew all this he said to

the Caion men, “You are cursed by God, you are the first traitors in the earth, this is what I get to free all of you, your recompense to have slaves of my name. God did curse you and I will stay away from you. I give no more my word, no more my help for you or you descendants.” Miel took all the colored people and sent them to Afra, then the colored people went to their king and told him all about the Caion men. They said the prophet Miel is in Caion now, but he didn’t know anything about the men that came according to their own will. When the king knew all this he united all the colored men, organized a troop to revenge the Caion men. But when they arrived at the lake they met the prophet Miel who stopped them. Miel said to them, “I want you to be calm because I will be with you for a long time and when I am with you I want peace, not war.” The colored people were so happy when Miel said I will be with, they all went back to Afra with Miel and his company. They rejoiced and respected the prophet Miel, Miel remained in Afra with the colored people for a long time. In Afra they did not have clothes, the people were naked. When the Caion men had been there with small aprons they traded each little apron for six of their men, for this trade several colored people were dressed in small aprons. But when they knew the Caion men were false they tore all the clothing they said for the damn clothing we have disobeyed our Great God Miel. When the prophet Miel saw the colored people tear their clothing and step on it after they burned them. Miel enjoyed himself and had a great laugh at this. The colored people all crowded around him and were glad to see Miel happy. They played more so he would be happy all the time. The King kneeled down to Miel, prayed and said, “Oh Great God you will forgive me my mistake if I sold my men I did it

for your namesake. Because the Caion men came over under your name I thought they were true, that is why I traded my men for their temptation clothing, I didn't disobey you with my own will, but I wish you would give me the privilege to revenge all that for your sake." Miel said to the King, "I wanted you to stay neutral while I live in the world." The King promised Miel not to bother the Caion men but if they'll come to take my men I will burn them. After Miel said to the King, "I will depart from you to go back to Ape, but I want you to have in God and let all your men do the same." The prophet Miel made two representatives of God and they learned what they had to do. He saluted everyone and gave the last good-bye and departed for Ape to be with his people. But the colored followed him and cried, "We don't want Miel to depart." The prophet Miel to calm the colored promised to them he would come back some time. Then the colored people became calm. The colored people accompanied Miel and cried all the time until he arrived at the lake, Miel encouraged all of them by saying, "Brothers don't cry, if you obey my command I want you to remain in peace with all your family, I will be back soon."

When Miel had passed on the Caion side he ordered the twelve men to return to Cainon, and he passed on the south part of Caion without a stop, but the Caion women followed him and prayed to him to stop in Caion to see the women and children, but Miel said, "I have no time to lose with you." All the men of Caion crowded around him and begged his pardon for disobeying, they had promised him not to disobey any more. Miel said to them, "Away from me, I won't believe your word because the people of Caion haven't any word. God Father won't curse you, but Caion will be without God, without me. Away from me I don't want even

to look at you.” The people were surprised to see Miel so angry, they didn’t know what to say. Miel departed alone to go to Aiel, but he was so discouraged being alone that he began to hate all, and hated to be in the earth, and hated to be a prophet.

Being old and alone, Prophet Miel began to act like a child and was so different. When Miel arrived in Aiel the people were so glad to see him they all crowded around him with great happiness, and gave to Miel all respect, but Miel didn’t care, he was just glad to see all well, in good faith, and he began to speak with the people, but only a short time he stayed in Aiel. All the time Miel was in Aiel the Cainon people went to see him. Miel was surprised how the Cainon people were all different, and he never forgot the Caion people how they disobeyed Miel’s word. Miel gave the Aiel people a great speech for the last time, he said to them, “Brothers I will my last word, I will explain a few important duties in the earth. I am proud to see all you with great obedience and respect of God’s command I wish you to remain forever the same. Stay close with God Father, you will be saved because, we are going to die, but we don’t know when and where, but God Father is all over to help the people that are close to him, don’t do like the Caion. After I did the other country for them they were the first people to disobey my word and God’s command, I want you not to do the same, if you do, God will forget you entirely, I will depart for Ape to see my people.”

Miel departed from Aiel to return to Ape. The Aiel people offered him their company, but he said to them, “Brothers, I thank you kindly, but I like to go alone.” Miel walked alone in the forest, on the road between Aiel and Caiol. During the fifteen days he was on his way many

animals crowded around him and kept him company. In the seventh day the prophet Miel was so tired he was not able to continue his walk. He lay down and fell asleep. When he awoke he didn't feel like getting up. He didn't have any more strength. He felt very discouraged. Two lions tried to help him, Miel said, "O, you are my only comfort, in my circumstances, ah, the prophet in his 103 years of age alone, but I won't be discouraged because God is my comfort, He will come to help me." The prophet Miel was filling in his last day of life, he was away from his people. Miel saw three stars above him and he said, "I am the one, I need help, but the only one to help me is my Celestial Father, God." In the last of his discouragement he prayed to God for the first time. Miel was helped by two lions, he kneeled down raised his eyes above and said. "O Elloil, celestial Father now I need your help I will implore your loyalty to help your prophet Miel, I need your help to return to my people." But as soon as Miel started his prayed, God was there with him, he heard the divine word before he saw God. The divine word said, "Miel, Miel, I am with you to give you all my help." Miel said, "O dearest celestial Father I am going to die in this forest far away from my people with out Giacovino and Aldoman, I implore your demenity to let me return to my people to die with my children and my brothers." God said, "Courage, courage, Miel I am with you to do whatever you desire, I am so sorry to take you away from the earth but the destiny of death can not be stopped because Maldechion Caine put the death in my earth, this is the destiny, it cannot be changed, but I will give you a celestial strength for 39 years, you will remain in the earth for my power." Miel said, "Oh no, Father I don't want that, I only want to return to my people then I am willing to die, to go to my destiny." God

gave Miel the courage and the strength, the two lions stayed by Miel's side. Miel stretched his arm on the lion's neck and started to walk. God flew to Caiol and hollered, "People of Caiol help your prophet Miel, follow me with the light I will bring you to Miel and you will help your prophet." The King of the Caiol united all his young men, took with them four or five seating chairs to use to help carry Miel. The people ran fast to arrive soon so as to help their prophet Miel. Giacovino, with Aldoman, saw three stars to bleat, departed with a big crowd of men to help Miel God father went back to Miel to watch him so that he would not be touched by the Bailan. God suspected if Miel was alone the Bailan would be able to get him without his willing, because Miel was weak and could not defend himself. So God never moved from his prophet Miel, God returned to Miel and Miel was walking with the help of the two lions, God encouraged the prophet all the time by saying, "Miel, don't be discouraged, I am with you, I will be with you forever, God Father has abandoned his celestial, his comfort to help his prophet Miel." God suspected if Bailan would get Miel under his control he would ruin all the people forever, but he didn't depart, he stayed with his prophet.

On the fifth day of Miel's weakness the people of Caiol arrived there and saw Miel sitting down with the two lions and God Father was above watching his prophet. The King went to Miel and asked, "My prophet, he is sick?" Miel said, "No brother, I don't feel sick, but I am going to die I need your help to bring me to my people to be buried in the same place I was born." The King with his men put Miel in the seating chair that was made like a limousine (they were called shoulder coaches) and carried him on the shoulders of eight men, and the eight men who were carrying Miel walked very

fast so as to arrive in Caiol to save their prophet Miel. The two lions walked along side of the coach and God Father flew above and encouraged the prophet Miel. When they all arrived in Caiol the prophet was very weak and the people tried to save Miel and gave him the best of care and the three stars remained above Miel in Caiol. The day after Miel arrived in Caiol the prophet Aldoman from Nile arrived in Caiol and when he saw Miel so changed and weak, he began to pray to God not to let Miel die and the prophet Aldoman was willing to die himself to save the prophet Miel, but God answered to him, "Aldoman, Aldoman, there is sorry sadness in my heart for Miel's sake but this is destiny, we all must die." The day after Aldoman arrived in Caiol, the prophet Giacobino from Ape and all the younger men went with him, and Giacobino's heart was very heavy when he saw the weakness of Miel, and he asked him, "What happened to my dearest Brother?" and he fainted right on top of him, but the prophet Miel said to Giacobino, "Courage, Brother, I feel like I was fifty years old, I am not sick, I have just suffered a weak spell," and he stood up like a young man and took the prophet Giacobino by the hand said, "Oh, Giacobino, Giacobino, if only you were with me in the forest when I was suffering all this weakness alone, but these two dear lions helped me very much."

Giacobino wept bitterly for the prophet Miel and said to him, "Brother, do not be discouraged, I will be with you now and if you die we must die too."

At the same time God said to Miel, "Miel, Miel, have courage, do not worry, you are united with your brothers Giacobino and Aldoman, I am more sure now that you are saved from the Bailan and I am willing to leave you for a few days but I will come back again."

God turned to the prophet Giacovino and said, “Giacovino, Giacovino, you are with your brother, but I want you to stay with him, and if any circumstances come, just call me and I will come down with you. I will give to Miel my Celestial power until he dies and when his time comes to die he will come with me in my Celestial throne.”

God Father departed for his Celestial throne and the three prophets remained in Caiol. God Father, every two or three days, would come down to see the prophet Miel with his company. The three prophets remained in Caiol for two years and the king of the Caiol, with the people, gave to Miel the best of care to revive his life, but the prophet Miel would talk with everybody, but did not have any more strength. He said to the people, “Brothers and Sisters of the Caiol, do not be surprised, I cannot please you with my speech like I used to, I have no more strength, I am standing on the earth with my Celestial strength. Don’t be surprised or worried if I refuse the food or beverages because the last meal I had was in the forest with the animals, I will be without food or drink two years in Caiol and for two years I will be with my people in the Ape.”

The prophet Miel looked like a skeleton and only had a laughing presence and the intelligence but no strength. He was very glad to talk with the people just like he was never sick. The two lions who had helped Miel in the forest were with him all the time and the king of Caiol and all the people did not want to depart from Miel, they tried to give him food but the prophet Miel always thanked them, but refused and said, “Brothers I am going to stay without eating because my strength died in the forest with these two dear lions, but I am with you with my Celestial strength to give my last to remain as a commander of God.”

The prophet Miel turned to his son Duty and said to him, “Son, I want you to take good care of the map of the new land, and when you die leave that to one of your children, do not forget to explain to them all about the new land so that when the people of Ape are going to surrender to the Bailan of Cainon you will unite all my descendants together and followed my map to the new land and you will be saved from any disturbances.”

After two years the prophet Miel departed from Caiol to Ape and when they arrived in Ape all the people crowded around him and they could not get close to him. All wanted to get close to Miel, all wanted to help him and all were sorry to see Miel so sick and weak. The prophet Miel, with great courage, talked with the people and said to them, “Brothers and Sisters of Ape I want all of you to thank God the Father for the Celestial strength that he has given me, he has helped me to return alive to your present and I recommend to you to keep my last words in your heart and soul not to forget God and do not forget the prophet Miel, but I will protect all of you from the Bailan, I want all of you to have faith in God because He is the only Celestial Father. I know from my experience in my circumstances there is only one to help me, and I want all of you to respect the commandments of God and to teach all of your children the same. Do not deny my word and get in with the Bailan of the Cainon with his evil; if you do disobey God you disobey Miel, and you disobey your own selves and God will punish all of you with Celestial catastrophes, and you and your children will suffer in the earth, you will be without the help of God or the peace of God. Your prophet Miel and God will not help you if you disobey the commandments of God. We will not be sorry for you if you remain under God’s command, God and

I will help you all the time, I cannot stay with you longer. I must die, I must pay for my body to treat the people of the earth and my soul goes to God and I get all my recompense for all that I have done for God's sake but I will not forget you, I will help you through any trouble if you will do whatever I wish, I haven't much time to stay with you, I must prepare to die."

In the meantime, God the Father went down to see his prophet Miel and God said to him, "Miel, Miel, I am with you. I will give you all my assistance and courage. Miel, Miel, I am with you and my heart opens to give you all my recompense. You are going to be with me in my celestial throne and when your brothers, Giacovino and Aldoman are destined to die and we come down to get them, and bring them up with us, there will be five persons in our company altogether. We will be willing to remain throughout all eternity to enjoy ourselves together."

The prophet Miel in his last moments to his eyes to God the Father and opened his heart and stretched his arms out and said, "Oh God, Celestial father, you are my only life. You are my only support. You the only God to help your prophet Miel. You are my judge. You are my king. You are my eternal recompensor of my soul. You do whatever you wish. I am willing to die. I wish to be with you, if your loyalty will permit me. This is my fourth year that I have been living with the celestial strength. I will not linger longer. I want to die to recompense your earth with my body and to have my soul be joyful with your celestial law. You gave me the recompense to do whatever you wish. I will accept for your loyalty's sake."

The prophet Miel turned to the people and said to them, "Brothers and Sisters of the earth I want you to take example

from me, I have been two years in Caiol and two years in Ape without eating or drinking, I am so proud with the Celestial strength, with the Celestial father's nutriment, that I want all of you to remember this and teach your children the experience you had with me."

God Father went low and close to be with the prophet Miel, and the prophet Miel turned to God with his arms opened and said to him, "Oh God, Celestial Father, you are so close with me, I wish you were willing to call my brothers Aldoman and Giacovino so that we could be all united with you in your throne."

As soon as Miel was through with his prayed, God stretched out a large canopy above Miel. This canopy was made out of a cloud and stood about three hundred feet above the ground, it had four columps around the canopy many harps were playing, a big coach was standing above the canopy which turned the air dark, and this coach opened by itself and God appeared with the greatest light and with open arms said to Miel, "Miel, Miel, here I am to take your soul with me, I am willing to wait for you as long as you wish."

Miel said to God, "Oh Celestial Father, you are my only guardian and support, I want you to give me strength to give my last good-bye to the people of the Ape," and the prophet Miel turned to his people in the darkness and said to them with all his heart and strength, "Brothers and Sisters I will leave to you the drop of my blood and strength and I will give to you my last good-bye. Do not forget your prophet Miel, I wish all of you to remain peaceful with your families."

The prophet turned over to God with opened arms and said with a loud voice, "Oh God, Celestial Father, here I am, I turn all to you, do whatever you wish with my soul."

The pigeons began flying furiously and the harpists were playing harmoniously and the celestial parade got larger and larger, the celestial lights became brighter and brighter, and the prophet Miel remained standing with his arms opened and his eyes turned toward the sky, so the people thought he was praying to God and the canopy with the celestial parade disappeared and went up to the sky, the harpists increased their harmony and the people remained in the dark, looked at the prophet Miel and he was still standing there like a statue.

After about one hour the prophet Giacovino and the prophet Aldoman got a hold of Miel by his arm and found him to be cold with death, they picked him up and laid him down on the ground. All the people were very sad for the death of the prophet Miel.

The prophets Aldoman and Giacovino laid the body of the prophet Miel in his coffin, and for forty-eight hours all the people were around him and after the forty-eight hours the prophet Giacovino called God and asked him what he should do about the burying of the prophet Miel and God answered the prophet Giacovino, "Giacovino, Giacovino, I want you to bury your brother's body on the hunting hovel where he was born." And the prophet Giacovino obeyed God's command and buried his brother on his dear old hunting hovel and the two lions remained lying on Miel's grave, and the people remained in the dark for three days and three nights.

After the thirteenth day of Miel's death, the two lions died and the prophet Giacovino buried them along side of Miel's grave and then the two prophets Giacovino and Aldoman remained day and night for thirty-nine days on top of Miel's grave, they were kneeling down and praying to Miel and

God above, and after the thirty-nine days the prophet Miel and God Father came down with the same canopy and the people saw Miel only. He went down to the top of his grave where Giacovino and Aldoman were praying and they saw the prophet, he gave one hand to his brother Giacovino and the other to Aldoman and they heard God's voice, "We are all united, we are all united." The prophet Miel then disappeared and all at once the people thought the prophets Giacovino and Aldoman were praying, but they were dead.

After the people knew the two prophets were dead they felt terribly sorry in their hearts and the prophet Miel's son uncovered his father's grave to bury Giacovino and Aldoman together, but they found that the prophet Miel's body was missing, but they buried the other two prophets in the same grave. After the three prophets were buried together the people of Ape built a large temple above the prophets' grave and named it "The Temple of God and the House of the Three Prophets." The house was always crowded, day and night, and for over three months the people heard the prophet Miel's voice in the temple and the voice said, "We are all united in the Celestial throne with our Celestial Father and his comfort eternity. We are willing to guard the people of Ape until they are willing to obey God's commands."

This is the story of the prophet Miel's life for one hundred and seven years. The prophet Miel lived one hundred and three years with his own strength and four years with the Celestial strength. He had been teaching the people for ninety-three years; he taught them all to obey the commandments of God; to respect each other, and he created the great Lake Tango. He was the one who created the Nile River; he also created the Jordan River to save the

people of Ape. He was the one who had the greatest power in the earth and whatever he did he did in the name of God and for the benefit of the people. He cleaned the Bailan and the evil in the earth and did not confuse people's minds. He did on the twenty-fourth of June, one thousand and forty-six years after our first father, Adam.

After the prophet Miel died the people of Ape remained discouraged for seven years and did not have any happiness, no enjoyment; all were feeling heartsick and sad. After seven years, to remember their prophet, Miel, they elected his third son to be ruler and king of the people of Ape. The third son of the prophet Miel, whose name was Adom, was elected king to rule the people of Ape one thousand and forty-eight years after our first father, Adam. He was only king for a short time. He died one thousand and fifty-six years after our first father, Adam. He left in command his first son, Miel, and he was king of Ape in one thousand and fifty-six. King Miel of Ape was a grandson of the great prophet Miel.

From the prophet Miel there began the real marriage of the duty and the law. From the prophet Miel began the representative of God and the prophet Giacovino was the first representative of God and the prophet Aldoman was the second representative of God.

When the prophet Miel died he let all the country under the king's rule and the representative of God. After the prophet Miel died the people began to differ. One thousand and fifty-eight years after our first father Adam, King Miel was ruler over all of the Ape people and his brother Jacom remained a representative of God and he had eight more men with him to be representatives of God and all were unmarried and kept all the Ape people in a great respect

to each other and the commandments of God. The other countries of Caiol, Nile, Cainon, Caion, Aiel and Afra all had kings and from two to five representatives of God, but after all knew that the prophet Miel was dead, they started a big change and one thousand and eighty-eight years after Adam all the new rulers of the world began to change, and the people of the Cainon began to spoil the law and the commandments of God.

After one thousand and eighty-eight years all changed amongst the seven countries.

Ape was ruled by King Miel and a representative, Jacom, with eight more representatives under him. They had all the people calm under his law, and they had great respect for the commandments of God, because Jacom, the leader and representative of God, had been keeping everybody under good father under the God Father's commandments and to respect each other.

Caiol was ruled by King Hamon and three representatives of God, and they had been keeping the people the same as Ape. They all obeyed the law and respected the commandments of God.

Nile was ruled by King Sarol, but the people in three parties. One was with King Sarol, another was with a representative of God and another did not believe in God or faith. In one thousand and ninety-one the representative of God of the Nile people had to leave and he took all his people into Caiol under King Hamon and they moved there to be under God's commandment and the prophet Miel. The parties that did not believe in God did not believe in the law. They turned to the Cainon Bailan and said the Bailan of Cainon was more powerful and was more friendly with the Cainon.

The Cainon was ruled by King Habro and he was a teacher of magnetism and spiritualism. He had many members in his circle and he began to develop witches, giants and all the malicious to be stronger than any country. His people were afraid of him and they did whatever he said. King Habro of Cainon had many thieves and these thieves used to go around to the other countries and used to steal on Caion; so the Caion men did not have any courage to defend themselves and the Cainon thieves used to do most anything that they pleased.

Caion was controlled by King Jacob and he had so many colored slaves that he had captured from Afra. When he saw the Cainon thieves go into his land and steal everything he began to build many towers to hide his grain and women. He had with him about twenty representatives of God and all the representatives had to do what King Jacob said, not the commandment of God, as the prophet Miel had taught them.

Aiel was ruled by King Anal, grandchild of the old King Anat and they had two representatives of God and the people all were calm with the greatest respect on the commandments of God and his king's law.

In Afra the colored King Meca was in command of the people. They were under law rule; respected their king, but had to annul the duty of the ten commandments of God. Marriage was without law. The people were all lazy; did not want to work; all their time passed by with dancing, enjoyments and playing.

These are all the laws they had in seven countries in one thousand and ninety-two years after Adam, our first Father. They continued the explanation of the changes of the laws of the seven countries and the earth's phenomenon and

Celestial sign.

In one thousand and ninety-three, above Caion's sea shone three comets for over four months and these comets changed to different colors and the people were afraid. They expected to have disaster on the earth and they began to remember the words of the prophet Miel.

There were many speeches on the earth. All tried to remain under Miel's command. The Caion people in the night all went to hide in the tower, or the crote, to be sure that they would be saved.

In one thousand one hundred and six, King Jacob of Caion united his men with the slaves and he went over to Aiel and started a great war with King Anal to take all the Aiel people under his command. But King Anal with his men went to the front and gave King Jacob a great assault and broke his lines everywhere and King Jacob had to retire to Caion with a great loss of his people and he asked for peace with King Anal and King Anal accepted the peace with King Jacob. But King Jacob had to pay a war tribute for ten years. King Jacob, to remember the peace between the Caion and Aiel, built a large tower and divided the line between Aiel and Caion and named the building the Tower of Peace.

In one thousand one hundred and seven King Jacob the Caion with King Anal of Aiel had to sign an alliance between the two countries and these two countries represented one.

In one thousand one hundred and eight Caion and Aiel had more men than any other country and thought that they could rule the world and started a war with Caiol. King Anal with King Jacob united his men from eighteen to forty years of age and went over to Caiol and camped their men in the southwest part of the country. They sent an ambassador

to King Hamon of Caiol and they wanted him to surrender all his people, but King Hamon with his four sons united his men and went on to the front to subdue his enemy, but King Jacob and King Anal had three times the number of men that King Hamon had and would not give them up. They remained camped around Caiol for a long time and they hollered for King Hamon to surrender all his men to them and if he would not they would destroy his people and capture the land.

King Hamon sent his sons to King Miel of Ape and explained all the circumstances and asked him for help to defend the great number of enemies.

When King Miel of Ape heard the news he called his eldest son Giacobino and said to him, "My dearest child, the people of Caiol are in danger with their enemy, the Caion and Aiel people. They are in combat and are running the country and they want them to surrender under his rule and King Hamon asks us for help. I leave this all to you if you want to unite your young men to help him; do whatever you please."

Giacovino answered, "Father, oh father, we are in the Ape land with God's name on our soul. We must remember our own people, who used to obey God's command, but now we must defend the Caiol people for God's sake and for the freedom of the children and women. King Hamon with his Caiol people respect us like friends, but I am willing to unite all the young men volunteers and name them God's troop and they will defend the enemy of the Caiol."

King Miel told King Hamon's son to explain to his father not to surrender to King Jacob and King Anal and that he was willing to send them help.

Young Giacobino united his men and gave a great speech

to all, saying to them, “Brothers, we must remember the word from our great prophet Miel. How he said the men of the Ape must defend the good people for the name of God and we must remember our old King Rowena, with the volunteer people of Ape destroyed the people of Berlant. Now I want all the young volunteers to be with me for in the name of God we must help the Caiol people to free all the women and children from Caion and Aiel brutalities.”

King Hamon of the Caiol needed help because all the Caion and Aiel people were camped around the Caiol land and all the young men from Ape from fifteen to forty years of age offered their services to young Giacovino to help King Hamon of Caiol. The volunteers said to Giacovino, “You must be our leader, our commander. We are going to go war to die or win. We never expect to lose. We are going to the war to have victory.”

Young Giacovino with all his volunteer men armed themselves with canes and started to go to war and before they left Ape all went to the house of the three prophets and all kneeled down and prayed to the great prophet Miel to help them out of danger. Young Giacovino began the greatest prayer himself and he said, “Oh Great prophet, I represent the Father and the command of my volunteer men You are the defense of the good people. I implore you to defend me with all my brothers; to give strength to our canes to defend all the Caiol people against the brutalities of the Caion and Aiel people.”

All the volunteer men heard the voice of the prophet Miel and it sounded like a singing voice: “Victory to my heroes. I am above you with our Celestial Father; do your duty to defend the innocent. You will be saved from any dangerous assault.”

When the commander Giacovino with his men heard the voice of the prophet Miel they felt so proud and confident in victory in their blood and hearts that they did not return to visit King Miel of Ape; and in a hurry they departed to go into Caiol. When Giacovino arrived he found that King Anal and King Jacob had begun a great assault in two ways. The Caiol people were almost lost, but the young Giacovino arrived in time and they went right straight to King Anal of Aiel to assault him and Giacovino hollered to his men, “Brothers, our greatest defender, Miel, will protect us. We should not fear; we get our victor; we go with the name of God. We must assault the enemy everywhere; we must all use our own judgment. Each one has command of his cane and we should not get the impression that the enemy are in the majority Even if we have only one against every ten, we must get the victory.”

All the volunteer men of Ape followed the command of Giacovino and assaulted King Anal and then began the greatest war in both parts, and the commander, Giacovino met King Anal and hollered to him, “Here, turn over to me. I will treat you with whatever you desire.” And he struck him with the cane so hard that it broke his head right in two and King Anal fell dead. After King Anal was killed his troops were scattered everywhere and they suffered heavy losses.

King Hamon with his men were on the other side to defend King Jacob of the Caion and King Hamon with his men held his enemy back, but they were too much for him and they could not advance. They were even neither one could advance. And as King Anal was killed and whatever of his troops were left they began to run away from the camp. Giacovino with his volunteer army advanced and assaulted King Jacob with his troops and gave them great assault

and beat them back, thereby breaking all their line. When Jacob saw his troops lose their courage and try to run away the younger Giacobino and the son of King Hamon chased them until they arrived at the dividing line and the land was covered with the bodies of the Caion and Aiel people. King Jacob left both his arms in camp and the commander of the Ape broke both his arms and he returned to Caion without his arms and Giacobino with the four sons of Hamon returned to Caiol with a great victory and King Hamon shook hands with his defenders one by one and thanked them for the help they had given him and King Hamon said to Giacobino, "Giacovino, my dearest child of Ape. My duty is to thank you and God with our greatest prophet Miel, for victory we have gained against our enemy."

The commander Giacobino said to the king, "Oh, great King Hamon, when we were on the temple of the three prophets to pray to them to give us the victory. We heard the prophet Miel's voice say to us we were going to get the victory against our enemy and we were sure the prophet Miel was with us because he never forgets his people; all will remember his volunteers and help them in the dangerous war."

King Hamon of Caiol went with Giacobino of Ape to visit the house of the three prophets to thank God and the prophet Miel for the great help they had received in the dangerous war.

Giacovino with King Hamon and all his volunteer men arrived at Ape they went straight to the temple. All started to praise God and Miel. King Miel of Ape knew the news, he together with his friend and family went to the temple to meet his hero son and King Hamon congratulated them on their victory. Soon as King Hamon was through praising he

went before King Miel. He knelt down and said, “Oh you are the father of the hero Giacovino. How thankful I am for the help your son gave me. He saved my country and my people.” King Miel said, “Brother Hamon, whatever we do it is our duty in the name of God. We defend the people from the enemy and enjoy the victory.”

When Giacovino told his father how he killed King Jacob of the Caion and how the volunteers were the greatest heroes with their canes, King Miel was glad to hear that and took his son by the shoulder and with tears in his eyes said, “Dearest child, you are descended from the beloved prophet Miel. You have been through the dangerous war and have come back to your father with victory. God will bless you with all the volunteer men of the Ape.”

King Hamon asked King Miel what gift he wished for his son Giacovino and what tribute he desired for the help they had given. King Miel answered, “Brother, the gift and tribute I want is that you and your people have great respect for God the Father and my grandfather, the prophet Miel. Don’t let the Bailans confuse your people.” King Hamon said, “Oh you are the child of the greatest prophet, Miel. How can my people for the help we have received from your son Giacovino and your volunteer men? I hope you will keep me as your friend.” King Miel invited King Hamon to remain with him at his house for a few days. After they were together for two weeks they departed for Caiol. King Miel took his family with him and they remained at King Hamon’s house for over three months, and the people of Caiol all crowded around King Hamon’s house for days and nights so as to be close to their king. When King Miel and his family departed for Ape to return to his home King Hamon and his family accompanied them to the dividing

line. There they were separated, remaining the best of friends.

King Miel with his family arrived at Ape and the volunteer men were all in his house of the three prophets armed with canes to go after King Miel. King Miel knew that he went there to see what was wrong and the volunteer men said to him they were going after their king because they had not seen him in two months. King Miel was glad to see his men with the great respect.

In 1112 years after Adam, King Hamon of the Caiol died and his first son, David, occupied his father's place. The new King David ruled his people with great respect for the law and God commandments and was a good friend of the Ape king and his people. The Ape and Caiol people were like brothers.

In the year 1115 after Adam, King Hombro of Cainon died and his Trampol occupied his father's place. Trampol the third was the new king of the Cainon people, but Trampol the third began to develop witchery and was disobedient to the other countries.

In the year 1115 after Adam, Habram, son of the dead King Jacob, was elected king of the Caion. King Habram was the king on account of the majority of votes. In the year 1116 after Adam, the brother of King Trampol married King Habram's daughter and Kim Trampol's sister married King Sarol's son of the Nile. King Sarol's son's name was Halaf. Halaf was strong for King Trampol and believed in magnetism and witchery. Halaf was friendly with the other countries. Through the intermarriage the three countries of Cainon, Nile, and Caion, they signed an agreement to remain together. The new ally was formed in Cainon and they built a big temple, naming it the Temple of the League

of Three Countries.

King Trampol with his brother-in-law, Half, worked witchery and maliciousness together so as to be strong to the Caiol and Ape peoples. King Trampol and Half wanted all the people of the other three countries to rule the world.

In 1116 King Habram of the Caion forced Aiel to be with the Caion people and took King Hanol away from the Aiel and wanted to have war with the Caiol and Ape people. He gave the command to King Hanol. King Habram said, "If Hanol was able to win the war with King David of Caiol he would get his country back."

In the year 1117 after Adam, King Hanol with the Aiel and Caion men all armed with canes departed for Caiol. Hanol camped his troops on the southwest part of the Caiol and he sent a message to King David saying, "If King David doesn't surrender his country he would burn him and all his family." King David answered the message saying that King Hanol would get an answer in 30 days as to what he would decide to do.

**THE STORY WILL BE CONTINUED IN  
THE SECOND VOLUME, BEGINNING  
FROM 1116 TO 3909 YEARS AFTER ADAM,  
OR TO THE FLOOD OF NOAH'S TIME.**

*special bonus materials*

*contemporary news reports*

Detroit Free Press  
Thursday, July 4th, 1929

**'DIVINE PROPHET,' WIFE, 4  
CHILDREN HACKED TO DEATH**

**Father Found with Head Cut Off;  
Five Other Victims Believed  
Killed During Sleep.**

---

**WEIRD ALTAR IN CELLAR  
BARES MYSTICS RELIGION**

---

**Wholesale Tragedy Laid to Fanatic;  
Humble St. Aubin Avenue Home  
In Scene of Murders.**

Angelo Depoli, 34 years old, 2830 Pierce street, was arrested last night in connection with the slaying of Benny Evangelist, "divine prophet" of a weird cult, his wife and four children, ranging in age from 18 months to 7 years, hacked to death yesterday at 3587 St. Aubin avenue by an unknown ax wielder, believed to have been actuated by religious mania.

Depoli was arrested by Detective Lieutenant John Whitman and Detective Charles Searle and Earl Switzer, and registered at headquarters as a disorderly person for investigation. The officers said they found a short ax in Depoli's

barn, along with a keen-edged banana knife and a pair of shoes, which apparently had just been washed.

**Admits He Knew Family**

The ax bore stains which will be tested to determine whether they are blood or rust. The man admitted his acquaintance with the Evangelists, but denied the murders.

Umberto Pecchio, 42 years old, 2630 Pierce street, and three other men were also held for questioning in connection with the slaying. Police declined to say whether these men were considered as suspects, but admitted there was a possibility they might shed some light on the case.

Police last night sought to sustain a theory Evangelist and his family were slain by the individual responsible for the deaths of Mrs. Henry Cipinski and her three children at River Rouge two weeks ago. Members of the Cipinski family were mutilated with the same savage ferocity which characterized the St. Aubin avenue slayings.

Chief Walter Hancock, River Rouge police, suggested that the killer may have consulted the "divine prophet" in connection with the downriver slayings and, fearful lest his confidence should be betrayed, returned to wipe out the Evangelist family.

The dead:

BENNY EVANGELIST, 44 years old, real estate operator and "divine prophet" of a mysterious religious cult.

SANTINA, 38 years old,  
Evangelist's wife.

ANGELINE, 7 years old, a

daughter.

MARGARET, 5 years old, another daughter.

JEAN, 4 years old, a third daughter.

MARIO, 18 months old, a son.

The body of Evangelist, with the head severed and lying on the floor beside the chair in which it was slumped, was found at 10:30 a. m. by Vincent Elias, 43 years old, real estate dealer, 2324 Glendale avenue. Elias intended to pay a business call on Evangelist, also engaged in the real estate business.

### **Background of Religious Insanity.**

The murderer worked with demoniac frenzy, apparently with the intention to sever the heads and arms of his victims. Behind the tragedy was a grotesque background of religious insanity paralleling in its weirdness and barbarism any voodoo fetish of the West Indies.

The Evangelist home is a two-story frame structure having four rooms downstairs and five up, in addition to a basement and an attic. On the upper floor the two front rooms are bedrooms, the three back ones being unused and virtually devoid of furniture. A bathroom is located off a hallway between one of the front bedrooms and one of the rear rooms. Opposite the bathroom door is the stairway leading downstairs.

Although Evangelist, slain in his office, was almost fully dressed when found, his wife and the children apparently had retired for the night when the assassin entered. Patrolmen Lawrence and Costage found the

body of Mrs. Evangelist lying on and hanging partly over her bed. Her head, horribly mutilated and nearly severed from the body, was projected over the side of the bed. The 18th-months-old boy, Mario, was found in bed with her, his head also badly lacerated and resting upon one of the woman's arms. The mother's other arm bore a deep laceration at the shoulder as if the murderer had sought to amputate it.

In the opposite bedroom, connected with the mother's room by a single door, lay the bodies of the remaining three children, two of them on twin beds in the room, and the third lying on the floor. Margaret's body was discovered on one bed, Jean lay in the other, and Angeline lay on the floor near a door opening to a long but narrow upstairs front porch. Like the parents and the youngest child, the heads of the three daughters had been horribly gashed, one of the children's arms also being severed at the shoulders.

### **Nothing of Value Missing**

Insofar as is known, nothing of any value, such as money, jewelry, or papers, was disturbed, although Evangelist had the reputation of being a considerably well to do real estate operator among the Italian colony on the east side.

Aside from his lay business activities, which cards found upon his desk indicated, included general building and repair contracting as well as real estate transactions of various kinds, Evangelist was described by neighbors as being a

“confirmed religious fanatic.” His religion also was something of a business, since cards found lying about his office read:

“Mr. Benny Evangelist, divine profetil, author and private history writer.”

He also is said to have received as much as \$10 for private “readings,” during which he called upon the powers of his own cult to heal various ills, either spiritual or physical, with which his “patients” were afflicted.

This cult, evidence indicated, was known as the “Union Federation of America,” and apparently was founded by Evangelist himself more than 20 years ago in Philadelphia. The founder, according to a preface in the cult’s “bible,” which Evangelist had written, was supposed to be, “with the power of God.” In a dingy, but electrically lighted room of the basement, the “prophet” had set up one of the weirdest “altars” ever uncovered in Detroit.

Eight or ten wax figures, each hideous and grotesque to the extreme, and each presumably representing one of the “celestial planets,” were suspended on the altar in a circle by wires from the ceiling. Among them was a huge eye, electrically lighted from the inside, which Evangelist referred to in his bible as “the sun.”

The walls and ceiling of this “religious sanctum” were lined with light green cloth, which bulged out in places like the walls of a padded cell. In a window of the basement, which was on a line with and visible from St. Aubin avenue, a large card bore the words: “Great Celestial Planet Exhibition.”

Evangelist and his family undoubtedly were killed while the “prophet” was in his office after having “read the signs” from the celestial bodies, for his bible states that he “saw them from 12 to 3 a. m.”

### **Planned Other Volumes**

Evangelist’s “bible” which he had titled “The Oldest History of the World, Discovered by Occult Science in Detroit, Mich.” apparently was written, or was to be written, in four volumes, the first of which covered everything from “4,305 years before our first father, Adam, to 1,116 years after the birth of Adam.” Indications were this was the only one of the four volumes that had been published since it was the only one found in printed form about the premises. Evangelist had written in its preface that he meant to complete his work “if he lived.”

The preface of the Evangelist bible follows, in full:

“My story is from my own views and signs, that I see from 12 to 3 A.M. I began on February 2, 1906 in Philadelphia, Penn., and it was completed on February 2, 1926, in the city of Detroit, County of Wayne, State of Michigan.

“On this new earth the last one was created by God the Father Celestial and the great prophet Miel. We call it today the great Union Federation of America. I am with the power of God and I respect this Nation.

“In this book I shall express all my views of past twenty years. In this great continent are all the generations.

## **Tales of the ‘Old World’**

“By the willingness of God, my respect to this nation, I shall do my best to tell you of the old world. I shall tell about the world before God was created up until this last generation, and I shall explain to you your descendants. 1. - Creation of God; 2. - Eternity; 3. - Creation of the Celestial World; 4. - Creation of Light; 5. - Creation of the Earth; 6. - Creation of the Sun; 7. - Creation of Eldom; 8. - Creation of the Moon and seven Celestial Commanders and how they united to rule the Earth. 9. - Creation of all Animals; 10. - Creation of Adam; 11. - Creation of Eve. 12. - The generations of Adam and Eve and their descendants; 13. - How and when all the generations began, from Adam to Noah. 14. - All the Celestial signs and earth phenomena and changes of peoples and laws.

“The Second World. After the flood, began the second world. 1. - Noah replaced all the people that were saved from the flood; 2. - Laws of the Second World; 3. - All the disaster happening to the people from Noah’s time until the New Testament; 4. - The building of the Tower of Babylon, the separation of five generations; 5. - King Solomon and his laws; 6. - Novita, the first astronomer, and first author of astronomy and the Bible; 7. - Something about the Astronomers and Prophets; 8. - Creation of South America; 9. - Creation of Attirante (Asia Minor); 10. - Creation of Northern (North America); 11. - Alessandro Magno and his power;

12. - The first people that sailed to three new lands, when and where they came from; 13. - Foundation of cities in the Second World, and the reincarnation of the people.

## **The ‘Third World’ Begins**

“The Third World. After the reincarnation of the Song of God that we call Jesus Christ, begins the Third World; how we are today, in the year 1926. If I live, I shall tell of the Third World; if not, the story closes at the Quates of Rome. Benny Evangelist.”

After this, which apparently was intended as a combination preface and index, Chapter One of the “bible” begins.

Despite the mass of evidence indicating that Evangelist was hopelessly mad on the subject of the mysterious cult of which he was the leader, a considerable number of holy pictures and tokens of the Christian faith were found on his walls in the various rooms of the home.

On the walls of the office were found a crucifix, an ordinary wooden cross and a picture of the Last Supper. There, also, were found two swords, neither of which, however, had been used in the slaying. A false wig and beard, probably used by Evangelist in his “readings,” lay among the unsightly disarray of office furniture. Three larger pictures of a child in a coffin were strewn on the floor.

## **Find Man’s Footprints**

In the kitchen, a pile of dishes, probably used for the last time Tuesday evening, had been washed

but not put away. Beginning near where Evangelist's head lay, a man's bloody foot prints lead back through the kitchen and up the stairway to the mother's bedroom. The man who made them left one track as he started to return, but there the prints were lost.

Evangelist's office is located to the side of a small reception room which contains the one and only front door to the house. That the slayer left the house by that door is evidenced by bloody finger and thumb prints left upon the latch.

### **Beer Found Near "Prophets"**

In another room of the basement, nearby the one containing the weird collection of "celestial prophets," was found an assortment of wine and beer, in kegs and bottles, a considerable quantity of vinegar, and a dozen or more jars of preserved fruits. In the attic, detectives found a larger quantity of old clothing, and a few herbs being dried preparatory to being used in the "prophet's" healing work.

That the "bible" was not written by Evangelist himself, but by another person for him, is seen in a typewritten letter which he had written and left upon the office table.

Evangelist was described as insane by his family physician, Dr. Alf E. Thomas, 3929 St. Aubin avenue. The victim, according to the doctor, had not been married many years and Dr. Thomas believed the children were Mrs. Evangelist's by a former marriage. Evangelist, the physician stated, had been planning to make

a motion picture depicting the history of mankind as interpreted by Evangelist in his peculiar religious belief. The "prophet's" right name was Benjamino Evangelista, Dr. Thomas said, and he originally was a carpenter.

### **Involved in Lawsuits**

Evangelist had been involved in a number of lawsuits over various real estate transactions, according to his attorney, Anthony A. Esperti, 2305 Mack avenue. However, none of these suits had inspired any enmity that might have caused yesterday's maniacal killings, Mr. Esperti said.

Except for his religious fanaticism, which was generally known both in his neighborhood and in the police department, Evangelist had a good reputation. His one and only arrested occurred in October, 1923, when charged with violation of the plumbing ordinance.

Although the "prophet," neighbors said, guarded with an almost sacred devotion the basement room where the various images of his cult held forth, he was given to frequent religious demonstrations on the street. One particular practice characterizing these public incantations, it was said, was his way of gazing toward and waving his arms at the sky.

### **Public is Invited**

About a month ago, police said, Evangelist suddenly was struck with the idea of admitting the general public to his "shrine," probably with the idea of converting other persons

and enlarging his cult. Permission to place the strange images on exhibit was denied him for fear it would cause trouble in the neighborhood.

Included in his "healer's" work, neighbors stated, was the ministrations of a "love potion," although he usually confined his "healings" to herbs and spiritual invocations. He had a permit to practice medicine so long as he did not use drugs or prescribe medicine, according to Major John F. Roehl, investigator for the department of health.

So revolting was the nature of the fiend's work that the crime drew to the scene practically every police official at headquarters, from Chief of Detectives Edward H. Fox down. A score or more detectives, including Inspector Bert MacPherson, of the blackhand squad; Inspector Joseph A. Garvin, of the crime and bomb squad; Detective Lieutenant John Navarre, acting head of the homicide squad; Inspector Joseph J. Miller, of Hunt street station, and Inspector Charles S. Carmody, of the finger-print bureau.

A squad of patrolmen was brought to the scene to keep back several hundred persons who had gathered on the street outside the house. The crowd remained long after the six bodies were removed to the county morgue.

Detroit Free Press  
Friday, July 5th, 1929

## **Massacre of 6 in Cult Family Baffles Police**

—

### **Three Quizzed and Released Without Results; Others Expected to Be Freed.**

The release of three of five suspects arrested late Wednesday night in connection with ax murder of Benny Evangelist, cult leader; his wife and four children, their home, 3587 St. Aubin avenue, was the only development police would disclose yesterday in their investigation into the slayings. Indications last night were that the remaining two suspects would be released, leaving detectives virtually where they started following discovery of the bodies at 10:30 a. m. Wednesday.

Those still being held were Angelo Depoli, 34 years old, 2630 Pierce street, behind whose home, near the house of death, detectives found an ax and a knife "either of which," police said, "might have been used in the killing," and Umberto Pecchio, 42, of the same address. John Valentine, 25; Samuel Verrachia, 51, and Steven Assoli, 46, all of whom live at 3731 Chane street, were released after the five men had undergone a thorough grilling at police headquarters.

Stains on the ax and knife discovered in Depoli's barn were founded yesterday not to have been caused by blood.

### **Fingerprints Scanned**

Detectives working on the case, who include all the members of both the homicide and blackhand squad, as well as several from Inspector Charles B. Carmody's fingerprint bureau, were unable to link any of the suspects to the crime by any of the finger and footprints left about the house by the slayer.

Evangelist, who professed to be a "divine prophet" of a weird religious order of his own founding, was beheaded early Wednesday morning. The "prophet's" body was discovered by Vincent Elias, 2324 Glendale avenue, a real estate dealer who had called at the Evangelist home on a business mission. Elias notified police, whose investigation disclosed the remaining victims.

### **All Hacked to Death**

Mrs. Santina Evangelist, 38, the wife, police found on a bed upstairs. Except for their son, Mario, 18 months old, found slain in the bed with his mother, bodies of the other three children, Angelina, 7; Margaret, 5, and Eugenis, 4, were found in their bedroom adjoining that of their parents. Like the father, all had been hacked to death.

Because the size of a pair of shoes which he was wearing corresponded with the bloody footprints leading from the headless body of the cult

leader to the bedrooms upstairs, Elias was questioned for several hours at both the scene and at headquarters. He was released however, when he convinced detectives he could shed no light on the massacre.

In the virtual absence of clues police yesterday realized they are confronted with one of the most troublesome murder mysteries in recent years.

No one can be found who will admit having seen anyone enter the Evangelist home during the preceding few hours, and no one can be found who will admit having seen anyone leave.

### **Religion Adds to Mystery**

The killings are made the more perplexing by a tangled mass of angles growing out of the "prophet's" religious and business activities.

Evangelist was a man of mystifying history on the religious side of his life. More than 20 years ago he founded the "Union Federation of America," a weird religious theory in his own somewhat warped mind, and, having been "appointed by God," he wrote the "bible" of that faith.

Briefly, the "bible" relates the adventures and good deeds of one Miel, an "exalted and powerful prophet," and "representative of God on earth." Apparently using the Christian Jesus as a prototype, Evangelist had the prophet Miel traveling with two "assistant prophets," obliterating dissension among peoples, winning wars for the righteous, and spreading the gospel

of God's commandments wherever he went.

### **"Bible" Visions Own Fate**

Evangelist pictured one character in his bible wrenching the head of an antagonist from his shoulders and hurling it at his feet, a fate such as the author, himself, suffered. Several other characters in Evangelist's writing suffered dismembered arms, just as Mrs. Evangelist and one of the children were mutilated. Detectives found a long wooden staff in the victim's office. In his "bible," Evangelist had described just such a staff as the one used by Miel and on which he had carved a notch for each of his children.

The weirdest of Evangelist's religions tokens, no doubt, were the waxen images of the "celestial planets," rulers over his religious world, found suspended from the ceiling of a room in the "prophet's" basement. Police believe this room was the scene of numerous seances presided over by Evangelist.

### **Fanatical in Worship**

Although Evangelist was fanatical to the point of frenzy in his manner of worship, he rarely ever discussed his beliefs with relatives or friends, according to Ben Sugumosta, 13904 Trumbull avenue, a second cousin of Mrs. Evangelist.

Sugumosta, a machinist, said yesterday he and his wife had visited the Evangelist family last Sunday and "noticed that Evangelist seemed to be worrying about something."

“Ordinarily,” Sugumosta said, “Benny was very jovial and friendly. Sunday he seemed to be pre-occupied, seemed to have his mind on something else. He smiled but little and had virtually nothing to say during our visit.”

Box after box filled with hundreds of papers, trinkets, and clothing of various kinds founded virtually littering the death house, have been carted to police headquarters to be more closely examined in the hope that some bit of it might point out an indistinct finger toward the slayer. Out of this wide assortment of material, nothing of value thus far has emerged.

Several pieces of women’s undergarments, each tagged with the name of its owner, police point out, reveal that the so-called mystic indulged in practices of “voodooism,” or devil worship. Such garments, “voodooism” has it, can lead to the finding of a missing person, when they are properly handled by one versed in the mystic arts of that belief.

Theories the police advanced yesterday follow:

That Evangelist and his family were slain by a member of his cult, a man himself so rabid that he had come to believe the “prophet” a faker.

That the family was wiped out by a husband whose home life had been wrecked because of his wife’s interest in Evangelist and his “occult powers.”

### **May Be a Rival Cult**

That a rival cult leader, jealous

of Evangelist’s growing “flock,” and from whose ranks Evangelist may have been drawing followers committed the crime.

Despite his work in the cult which he had founded, Evangelist was a Roman Catholic and often attended San Francisco’s Catholic church, at Rivard and Brewster streets, Father Francis Beccheniu said yesterday. Father Beccheniu will officiate at the burial services for the entire family Saturday.

“Evangelist, no doubt, was insane,” Father Beccheniu said, “Of that I am sure, although he was shrewd and seemed to have quite a lot of intelligence in other matters. Mrs. Evangelist was more of a fanatic than her husband on the subject of religion, and she did not display the intelligence revealed by him.”

### **Was Not Sincere**

“I do not believe Evangelist was sincere in practicing the creed he had established. Rather, I believe he founded the mysterious cult with all of its weird props and practices, with the sole idea of making money. He was a practical mind.”

The couple’s oldest daughter, Angeline, 7 years old, attended the San Francisco parish school, Father Becchineu said.

Dr. Paul Klebba, Wayne county medical examiner, who yesterday performed postmortem examination on the six bodies, stated that the murderer must have used a sharp and heavy knife rather than an ax. The bodies were released shortly after the postmortem examinations to Anthony

Evangelist, 2150 Erskine street, a brother of the slain father. Funeral services will be held Saturday.

Detroit Free Press  
Friday, July 5th, 1929

### **Solution of Killings Is Seen In the Stars**

—

#### **Detroit Astrologer Describes Slayer of Evangelist, Wife, Children.**

While detectives continued their efforts to solve the murder of Benny Evangelist and his family, it was indicated last night that such measures were unnecessary. The slayer will give himself up probably with a few days. If he does not he will talk freely and be easily captured.

Both conclusions were reached by Clark Robson, "human engineer."

#### **Sees It In Stars**

His conclusions were arrived at by the use of astrology. His deductions are based on the position of the planets with relation to one another in the 12 divisions of the heavens as viewed from Detroit at the approximate time of the crime. He also studied the juxtaposition of the planets at the time of Evangelist's birth. Robson says many astonishing things were revealed.

The murdered, he says, in all probability, is a man of less

than medium of height, of dark complexion and strong, agile and wiry. His hair may have a reddish tinge, and he has an egocentric personality. This can be concluded from the fact that the planet Uranus was rising on the eastern horizon in the sign Ares.

### **“Woman Has a Hand”**

The presence of a woman at the scene of the crime, Robson learns, is indicated by the fact that the Moon was in conjunction with Venus and involved in violent aspects with Mars and Neptune. There is a woman in it somewhere, Robson said, and if she wasn't on hand at the scene, she has been told about it since. The woman mentioned is not Mrs. Evangelist, however.

The motive, arrived at through the aspects of Mars and Neptune's in the sign of Leo, was undoubtedly jealously.

The statement that the crime will be solved easily and probably through the inability of the perpetrator of the crime to keep his own counsel, comes from the aspect of Mercury to Uranus. They are 50 degrees apart. The murderer also is likely a braggart, because of this and if he is and arrested because he talks may even go so far as to give himself up in order to achieve notoriety.

### **“Could Have Saved Self”**

Evangelist probably could have prevented the crime, Robson believes, since Mars appears to have been the ruler of both the first division of the

chart and of the division known as the House of Death. He probably suspected it and didn't care much, or else thought that he had time to escape.

It was probably some matter of money that led to the argument which preceded the murders. A great deal of discussion was indulged in before the crime, according to Robson's horoscope for Evangelist, who adds that it probably was his ability to anger another which led to his death.

Homicidal tendencies are prominent in the chart, Robson said, with the confictions of Mars and Neptune to the Moon and Venus. Mrs. Ruth Snyder, who went to the electric chair for the murder of her husband, was born under the same confiction, Robson pointed out. This also suggests a treacherous nature for the murderer and Robson has no doubt that it was someone well acquainted with Evangelist.

As for Evangelist's horoscope, cleverness and strength of character are shown. He was probably not insane but had an ego-exultation complex and desire for money was a motivating power in his life, according to the stars. He was a man who would deceive intentionally, Robson declared.

Detroit Free Press  
Friday, July 5th, 1929

## **KIN ESTRANGED FROM PROPHET**

---

### **Evangelist's Brother Split With Ax Victim Over Strange Religious Tenets**

A four year old girl sat on the steps of a house at 2156 Erskine street yesterday afternoon apparently convinced she was not doing justice to the celebrations demanded by the Fourth of July. She seemed bored.

Inside the house in a darkened room, were the only Detroit relatives of Benny Evangelist, who, with his wife and four children, was founded hacked to death in his combination home, office and religious shrine at 3587 St. Aubin avenue, Wednesday morning.

### **Brothers Were Estranged**

Anthony Evangelist, the dead man's brother, his wife and friends of the family from about the neighborhood had gathered to mourn and exchange views on the mysterious wholesale murder of the strange self-styled "divine prophet."

There was little to say. Practically no contact had been maintained between the two families, although

they lived within easy walking distance of each other.

A rift between the two brothers took place some 20 years ago in Philadelphia when Benny began to have the ideas which lead to the founding of his cult. Anthony, eight years his senior and a devout Roman Catholic, refused to have anything to do with it. He had never attended one of his brother's seances, nor had he been inclined to listen to Benny's doctrines, or to read his books.

### **Split Over Doctrines**

Benny was born in Naples, Italy and, according to his brother, had been a perfectly normal boy. Twenty-eight years ago Anthony came to Philadelphia. Two years later he sent for Benny, who was then 17 years old. A third brother is still living in Naples.

In Philadelphia, they lived together for six years until the theology of the younger brother came between them. Some years later both brothers came to Detroit, but remained estranged.

Anthony's eyes were red from weeping yesterday. Others in the gathering were dry-faced, but serious. Their faces showed plainly that it was the manner in which the family had met their deaths rather than death itself that had effected them. A few sentences in Italian were exchanged from time to time, but there was a silence for the most part.

Detroit Free Press  
Sunday, July 7th, 1929

## **SEEK 2D SHRINE IN AX DEATHS**

### **Police Quiz Company That Made Paper 'Gods' For Slain 'Prophet'**

Possibility That Benedict Evangelist, "divine prophet," who was slain Wednesday with his family of five by a maniac who is still at large, had shrines other than that found in the basement at 3587 St. Aubin avenue, appeared last night with the revelation that a decorating company had draped another basement on St. Aubin avenue with green hangings at Evangelist's request.

While other police officers have refused to divulge the trend of their investigations, it appeared that a governing theory has been advanced by Lieutenant Royal A. Baker, police film censor and mental expert, that the murderer was a degenerate or a mentally deficient person scared into killing the Evangelists through fear of his basement idols.

### **Suspect Is Released**

The decoration work was carried out by the George P. Johnson Flag and Decorating Company, 3529

Gratiot avenue, which also made the papier mache "gods" found in the dead man's basement. The address on the company's records was found to be that of a vacant lot, but the employee detailed to the work will point out to detectives on Monday the house in which he made the decorations Evangelist paid for. The employee could not be located last night.

John Ryan, Eugene Street, Fordson, arrested at the combined funerals of the Evangelists yesterday, was released last night. Lieutenant John Navarre, acting head of the homicide squad, said the man knew nothing of the murders and that it was physically impossible for him to have committed them. Ryan weighs about 90 pounds. Dressed in a battered straw hat, without a band, and a much worn suit, Ryan rode a bicycle from Fordson "to see the funeral."

### **3,000 Mill About Church**

The opal-colored caskets, bearing the mutilated remains of the Evangelist family were carried from the church of San Francisco, Rivard and Brewster streets, to Mt. Olivet cemetery yesterday.

A crowd of 3,000 persons, mostly women, milled around the church for several hours for a glimpse of the victims on their last journey, while numerous detectives circulated through the mob searching for a small, heavy set man who has been visualized as the type guilty of the massacre.

Although Lieutenant Navarre, declared that a solution to the mystery

would be forthcoming soon, no details of tangible clues were made public. The practical problem facing the piece was to discover what became of the murderer, who must have been drenched with his victims' blood after he left the Evangelist home at 3587 St. Aubin avenue in the early hours of Wednesday morning. Where did he change his clothes, and how did he dispose of his weapons?

### **The Newest Developments**

The principal developments yesterday were:

A statement by Chief of Detectives Edward H. Fox that three officers, including a finger print expert, had left Detroit for an undisclosed destination, as a result of information received by him.

A statement that the book of crazy theology, the authorship of which has been attributed to Evangelist, was not written by him but by some other lunatic, who is unknown.

Arrest at the Evangelist funeral of a mentally deranged man.

Discovery that the five-year-old victim, whose name was given as Mathilda or Margaret, and who was considered to be a girl, was in fact a boy named Matthew.

A statement by Lieutenant Royal A. Baker, police film censor and expert on mental degeneracy, that the murderer was either a sadist or mentally deficient person, scared into killing the Evangelists to propitiate the grotesque "gods" found in the basement of the "prophet's" home.

A statement by the George P. Johnson Flag & Decorating company,

3529 Gratiot avenue, that Evangelist paid about \$100 for the figures found in his basement and \$22.50 for the decoration with green hangings of a basement on St. Aubin avenue, an address which has not hitherto figured in the investigation.

### **Relatives at Church**

The figures were made by F.J. Martin, 3505 Gratiot Avenue, a papier mache worker, who said he regarded Evangelist as a lunatic. The "prophet," he said, explained that he wanted the figures for a theatrical entertainment.

The caskets were wheeled from the funeral establishment of F. J. Calcaterra, diagonally across Rivard street from the church, by 16 whiteclad girls. The caskets of the "prophet" and his wife were attended by friends, while the principle mourners were Joseph Evangelist, brother of the dead man, and his wife, May. The latter bordered on a state of collapse and had to be supported.

In the Church of San Francisco, solemn requiem high mass was sung by the Rev. Francis Beccherini, rector, assisted by Rev. Fra. Philip and Ambrose, both of the Benedictine order, from the Church of Our Lady of Help.

Women, some of them with babies in their arms, fought for places in the church, which was filled long before the services commenced. The singing of the priests and choir was accompanied by the crying of children and the sobbing of women as they viewed the long file of caskets ranged down the center aisle before

the altar.

### **A Brilliant Scene**

The altar was brilliantly illuminated with electric lights and candles and decorated with lilies of the valley. The priests wore black robes embroidered with silver, usual in masses for the dead.

Fr. Beccherini said both Evangelist and his wife were religious maniacs, each of whom had been after him with tales of celestial visions and of their power to call up devils from the vast deep. The priest chased them away, he said, and instructed his assistant to have nothing to do with them “for fear of a scandal.”

In other respects, Fr. Beccherini said, the Evangelists were orthodox Catholics. Each of their five children, one of whom died, had been baptised a few days after their birth, according to the practice of devout Catholics.

It was Fr. Beccherini’s baptismal records which established the fact that the second murdered child was a boy and not a girl.

Fr. Beccherini also said that Evangelist and his wife were practically illiterate and neither could have written the volume circulated by the “prophet”.

Lieutenant Baker, who is investigating the murders from a psychological angle, yesterday expressed a belief that the massacre was committed by a sadist with a blood lust, who derived his gratification from the agony of his victims.

The fact that the whole family was wiped out, Baker said, indicated an

adult who had previously committed murder under similar impulses and whose disease had reached a stage that only wholesale killings, rather than individual murders, could bring satisfaction.

Baker said such a murderer, if not arrested, would be likely to repeat his crime in some other locality away from Detroit.

He said that the argument against this theory was that sadist murderers usually did their work in the light. While Evangelist was killed in a lighted room, his wife and children were apparently killed in the dark, unless the murderer switched on the light or carried a torch. Police have seen no information of a light being seen in the bedrooms where the woman and children were sleeping.

### **Theories are Developed**

His alternative theory was that the victims were hacked by a lunatic brought to Evangelist for treatment. He said that if a mentally deranged man were confronted by the hideous images found in the “prophet’s” basement shrine the effect might be to induce in the mind of the lunatic a hallucination that he must kill the Evangelists to prevent their exercising the evil powers of these “gods.” Primitive religions, he pointed out, were mainly based on the necessity of propitiating their fearsome gods.

The theory that there was substantial motive of gain has virtually been abandoned. Lieutenant Navarre said yesterday that Evangelist had little money, if any.

Detroit Free Press  
Wednesday, July 10th, 1929

## HUNT AX CLUE IN TWO CITIES

—

### Police Again Turn Search for Slayer of Family of Six Away from Detroit

Search for the ax slayer who butchered Benny Evangelist and his family at 3587 St. Aubin avenue, a week ago, and for clues that may ensured the fiend, for a second time has led to two cities outside of Detroit.

Inspector Fred Frahm of the homicide squad refused to reveal the places where the search is to be conducted. Late yesterday afternoon, however, he disclosed that Detective Lieutenant William Johnson of the homicide squad had left Detroit on this mission shortly after 4:30 p. m. A previous out-of-town search took Detroit Detectives to St. Louis. Their search there was in vain. Similar efforts in Detroit yesterday proved fruitless.

### Note 'Clue' Fruitless

Following information contained in a note sent by a person who signed himself as "The Murderer," police yesterday vainly searched the 5400

block on Lincoln avenue, where the note writer said the "bloody axe" with which the murders were perpetrated would be found in a suit case.

The note, written on a folded slip of paper and sent to the Grand River avenue police station, had not been enclosed in an envelope. Police learned it had been mailed from a box at Kirby avenue and Fifteenth street. It read as follows:

"My consions bother me since I killed that family of six so will confess and say I am sorry. I live on London avenue, in the 5400 block, but I won't give the house number because I want thinking time. Search the houses and you will find the bloody hatchet in a suitcase. I am ready for the worst punishment I can get."

That the letter is the work of a crank, is the opinion of Major James E. Murphy, of the International Identification bureau here.

It seems to me that the writing is that of a comparatively well educated person, a good penman, who has attempted to disguise himself by the use of poor grammar and spelling," Major Murphy said. "The smooth flow of one letter into another indicates that the writer has been used to doing a good deal of writing; the irregularity of the letters is probably only a disguise. The thought, also, seems to indicate that the writer is either a psychopathic jokesters or a real crank."

### Believes Killer Wrote Note

In the opinion of Agnes V. Hildebrand, who analyzed the

handwriting from a newspaper reproduction, the letter is not the work of a crank, but was executed in all probability by the slayer himself. A heavy shading of the letters and a certain looping of them indicates that the writer was a coarse and brutal person of primitive and obstinate character, she said. A morbid, brooding and pessimistic nature was also indicated, she stated.

Inspector Frahm believes the note was a hoax perpetrated by a crank.

“We get many of these notes in murder cases,” he said, “but nevertheless we have to investigate every clue we get.”

The inspector ordered the release of a suspect who was arrested by police of the Hunt street station. Whether a hatchet, seized in a woodshed of an east side home, belonged to the suspect, Frahm would not say.

The hatchet, as described by Frahm, was one with a double blade, apparently a lather's hatchet. It bore the name of Ferri Gregori, stenciled on the handle.

### **Blades Differ, Says Frahm**

“The hatchet blade was about two inches in length,” Inspector Frahm explained. “Lieutenant Navarre tells me the one we seek has a double four-inched blade.”

Meanwhile Inspector Frahm and his aides are investigating all circumstances surrounding the murder on February 19, 1926 of Felice Argento, 33 years old, then living at 2225 Scott avenue. Argento was shot when he walked into an

ambush laid by Angelo Paparo, 3532, St. Aubin avenue, and his son-in-law, Louis Evangelist.

Police are to question Evangelist to determine if he is related to the slain ax victim. They also plan to question Benny Abruzzi, a contractor, who is said to have received a “black-hand” demand for money several years ago and is said to have told police Benny Evangelist acted as “go-between.”

Detroit Free Press  
Thursday, July 11th, 1929

**AX SLAYER HUNTED IN EAST  
AFTER TRAIL IS PICKED UP IN  
PITTSBURGH**

**DEAD CULT  
HEAD'S KIN  
GIVES CLUE**

—

**RECALLS KILLING  
OF BLACKMAILER**

—

**Latter's Death May  
Have Been Cause of  
Slaying of 6**

Two Detroit detectives left Pittsburgh last night for New York to follow up "valuable clues" uncovered yesterday in the Pennsylvania city relating to the massacre of Benjamin Evangelist, his wife and their four children at 3587 St. Aubin avenue a week ago.

The nature of the clue was not revealed, according to a Pittsburgh dispatch, but the detectives received information from Louis Evangelist, a relative of the slain "prophet" who fled Detroit three years ago when he feared the vengeance of friends of Felice Argento, alleged black hand extortioner, shot during what was described as an attempt to collect \$5,000 by threats.

**Looking For Leads**

Detroit police have been endeavoring to locate Louis Evangelist since Monday night. He is a railroad gang foreman at Caraopolis, suburb of Pittsburgh.

Louis Evangelist, with his father-in-law, Angelo Papraro, left Detroit a few days after the latter had shot and killed Argento when Argento came to 3587 St. Aubin avenue to receive \$5,000 which Papraro agreed to pay him to avoid the execution of threats. Evangelist and Papraro had informed police of Argento's threats, but the two detectives assigned to protect Papraro were not present when the alleged blackmailer walked into the ambush laid for him.

**Feared For Lives**

So terrified were Evangelist and Papraro that Argento's friends would seek vengeance that they left Detroit a few days after the shooting. Fearing that any of the city depots would be watched by the avengers, the men drove to Pontiac and entrained there.

At Pontiac, Evangelist and Papraro were arrested as suspicious characters, but Detroit police assured the Pontiac officers the two men were actually fleeing for their lives. They were then permitted to leave.

If the clue leading detectives to the east proves substantial, it will mean the six Evangelists were hacked to death in one of the most ferocious crimes in Detroit history as satisfaction for a feud which

commenced three years ago.

Admission by Inspector Fred Frahm, of the police homicide squad that he held two anonymous letters sent to Evangelist some time prior to his death, was disclosed yesterday.

At the same time Inspector Frahm emphatically repudiated a story appearing in an afternoon newspaper that the homicide squad held five "blackmail" letters, one of which threatened death to Evangelist and his family "unless they carried out the terms of the letter."

### **Earlier Report Denied**

Besieged by newspapermen immediately following his return to his office, after having been out most of the day running down some of the few remaining "leads" left in the case, Inspector Frahm branded the "blackmail" letter report as "unfounded and untrue."

"Do you possess any letters sent to Evangelist?" Frahm was asked.

"I have two letters," was the reply.

"Are they 'blackmail' letters or threatening letters?"

"I cannot answer that."

"Do you know who wrote them?"

"They were anonymous."

"Do you attach any significance to either of them?"

"I cannot say as to that."

"Have you heard from Lieutenant Johnson?"

"I have not."

Lieutenant William Johnson, one of Frahm's aides, was sent out of the city late Tuesday afternoon on a clue that developed during Tuesday's investigation. His destination was not

disclosed.

Frahm stated that the letters in his possession are signed "Blackhand." They demand money of Evangelist but do not threaten him, Frahm said.

Detroit Free Press  
Monday, July 15th, 1929

## **Letter Leads Police To Ax Slaying Clue**

—

### **Find Lansing Man Referred to In Note; He tells of Threat by 'Healer's' Patient**

A person who sought out Benny Evangelist for treatment of physical or spiritual ailments later may have wielded the ax that slew the "mystic prophet and faith healer" and his wife and four children two weeks ago, it was disclosed yesterday when detectives went to Lansing to question a tailor in response to an anonymous note.

George Pricco, 38 years old, a tailor at the Vocational School for Boys, interviewed at Lansing by Detective William Johnson of the homicide squad and Sergeant Max Waldfoegel of the Italian squad, said Evangelist had feared death from some person who had come to him as a patient. He was told this, Pricco said, by a Detroit woman who received treatment from Evangelist.

### **Denied Knowing Healer**

Pricco denied knowing Evangelist and said he had not been in Detroit since February. Until a year ago he lived in Gogebic county. He said his

only knowledge of the ax slaying came from the newspapers and the Detroit woman, whose name was given to detectives.

The detectives went to Lansing after a special delivery letter, unsigned, informed them that Pricco could give information that might have an important bearing on the case. Efforts to locate the writer of the note and learn his motive for sending it were unavailing. Pricco said he could suggest no one would might have sent the letter.

The letter was mailed in Lansing at 8:30 p. m. Saturday. It arrived in Detroit at 9 a. m. and was delivered to Sheriff Ira Wilson by messenger shortly before noon. He immediately turned it over to the homicide squad.

It arrived at a time when the investigation into the slaying was virtually at a standstill for lack of further clues. The family was killed with an ax the night of July 3. No arrests have been made.

### **Text of Letter**

The text of the letter follows:

"Mr. Ira Wilson-Sheriff of Weine Co.-Detroit Mich-Sir just few line to introduce you a name of a good man of which I believe he will lead the road to discover the brutal slaughter of Evangelistas if you onley give him the power to act the investigation- This man live at 1485 E. Grand River-His name is Privcko George-Lansing."

Although posted Saturday night, the letter was dated July 6, three days after the slayings.

Detroit Free Press  
Wednesday, July 17th, 1929

## **POLICE AT SEA IN AX SLAYINGS**

—

### **Admit They are Without Evidence To Go on With Investigation**

Two weeks after the slaying of Benny Evangelist, a faith healer, and his wife and four children in their St. Aubin avenue home, the combined forces of the homicide and blackhand squads of the police department admitted yesterday that they are without evidence on which to continue an investigation.

The only clues to the identity of the murderer are two slightly smudged fingerprints which the police insist were left by him. Shadow upon the efficacy of this evidence is cast by the fact that the house, soon after the hacked bodies were found, was invaded by dozens of officers of the law, coroner's deputies and assistants, the clever curious, the prosecuting attorney and the newspaper men.

### **Prophesied Own Death**

These prints have been broadcast to the police officers throughout the states and Canada where they will contribute to the identification

of the murderer only if he falls into the hands of the law on some other charge.

Evangelist was almost beheaded by an axman in his study. His wife and children were killed in the same manner in their beds. The bodies were found approximately eight hours later on July 3.

Some persons who have perused the "bible" which Evangelist wrote and which betrays religious insanity, believe he prophesied his death. They suggest that, motivated by such delusions, he may have incited one of his followers to commit the crime.

The singular ferocity of the murders, however, introduces the theory that the family may have been dispatched out of motives of revenge, probably by some dissatisfied patron of the faith healer.

### **"Fame" Spreads Afar**

It is known that stories of his "curies" had penetrated the Italian colonies of other large cities and that often scores of ailing men and women waited upon him in his home.

Evangelist's religious effusions were tinged with morbidity. Vampires and much blood are to be found in his "bible." In the cellar of his home was a gallery of crude and more or less horrible stuffed figures representing the various powers of his universe.

It is the general opinion of those familiar with the details of the case, that the murders undoubtedly tied up with Evangelist's assumption of the role of prophet. Until about four years ago, he was a carpenter.

Detroit Free Press  
Wednesday, July 31st, 1929

## **NEW EVIDENCE IN AX SLAYING**

—

### **Deal to Buy Lumber on Eve Of Murders Bared; Truckman May Hold Secret**

The answers to two questions, raised for the first time yesterday, may point to the murdered of Benny Evangelist, his wife and four children in their home at 3587 St. Aubin avenue a month ago.

New information, unearthed yesterday by Free Press reporters, showed that on the evening of July 2, the day before the six mutilated bodies were discovered, Evangelist appeared at an address on Huribut avenue, near Vernor highway, where a house was being torn down, and arranged for the transportation of a quantity of second hand lumber he was buying from the house wrecker.

### **Truck Failed to Arrive**

He arrived there with a friend between 8 and 9 p. m. and told the watchman he would have a truck call for the material at 7 a. m. the next day. He also said he would be there himself to pay for the lumber.

Why Evangelist did not show up with the money at the time of the

appointment is no mystery. He was dead. But the question, which-if it is answered-may lead to the solution of the crime, is: Why did the truck fail to arrive?

The second question which has, so far, balked further investigation, is that of the name of the cartage company which Evangelist had employed. He did not mention it to the watchman, although he gave the impression that he already had negotiated with the company. The haul in question was a distance of some 60 miles to Evangelist's farm and not the kind of a job one would be likely to ask a trucking company to undertake on short notice.

### **Furnishes Robbery Motive**

Evangelist's body was not found until more than three hours after his unkempt appointment with the house wrecker. It is impossible that newspaper accounts of the murders could have acquainted the truckers with the fact that Evangelist was dead and that to remove the lumber was useless. One explanation might be that a truck driver had called upon Evangelist at his home before going after the lumber, discovered the bodies and had decided that it would be safer to keep silence about what he had found.

Another bit of information provides the motive of robbery for the crime. Since there would have been no opportunity to draw money from the bank between the time he talked to the night watchman and the time that he had promised to pay the money, about \$200, for the lumber,

the murdered man must have had the money on his person at the time of the murders.

### **No Money in Home**

No money was found either in the house or on Evangelist's body when the murders eventually were discovered. As a matter of fact, the sum which he had on hand before the murder probably exceeded the sum he was able to pay for the lumber by several hundred dollars, since Vincent Elias, who had sold him his farm, was calling for a second payment when he walked into the scene of the massacre.

A man, who was with Evangelist when he spoke to the watchman about the lumber, was arrested as a suspect but released after questioning. He said he parted from Evangelist soon after this conversation with the watchman.

Detroit News  
Saturday, November 21st, 1931

### **LEADER OF CULT ADMITS SLAYING AT HOME 'ALTAR'**

### **Police Trying to Link Voodoo Chieftain to Evangelista Case**

### **Victim Was Stranger, Killer Tells Officials**

A self-crowned "king" of a weird religious cult was being held Sunday night by police, following his cool admission late in the afternoon that he had selected and brutally murdered a sacrificial victim on an improvised altar in his home at 1429 Dubois St.

Robert Harris, forty-four-year-old Negro, is the "king" of the strange religious order, which he claims boasts a membership of 100 Detroit Negroes.

A palm print of Harris is to be compared by fingerprint experts of the Detroit Police Department in an effort to identify him as the ax killer of Benny Evangelista, his wife and four children here July 3, 1929. Evangelista, also leader of a fantastic religious cult, was believed by police to have been the victim of the head of some rival order.

Detective Sergt. Michael McGowan, who took part in the

Evangelista investigation, questioned Harris for half an hour early Monday morning. Harris told him, he said, that he came to Detroit from Tennessee in the fall of 1929, which was after the Evangelista murders. He denied knowing anything about the family massacre.

### **Check Fingerprints Monday**

Detective Lieut. Paul H. Wencel, who also took part in the search for the slayer of the Evangelista family visited headquarters Sunday afternoon and conferred with Homicide Squad detectives.

Liet. Wencel said that the fingerprint comparison would be made Monday but that its results would not be announced for a day or two, until police had been able to check Harris's history.

James J. Smith, 40, also a Negro, was Harris' sacrificial victim. The "king" admitted crushing Smith's skull with the rear axle of the an automobile first and then stabbing him through the heart.

Smith's body was discovered on the makeshift altar late Sunday afternoon by neighbors, who notified police and named Harris as the likely killer. The "king" and his wife, Bertha, 35, were arrested at 2729 Clinton St. Both went without protest to Police Headquarters.

There Harris, a large Negro, with no sign of misgiving admitted the slaying while his wife looked on. She corroborated his statements.

Then, straightaway, he unfolded the story of a mystic cult, as strange and barbarous as a voodoo fetish.

With pride, he reminded the officers, that he was "king" of the "Order of Islam."

### **'Divine Prophet' Slain**

Evangelista, likewise, headed a religious order, being hailed as its "divine prophet." A short ax and a keen-edged knife were believed by police to have been the implements which dealt death to Evangelista, his wife, Santina, and their children, Angeline 7, Margaret 5, Jean 4, and Mario 18 months.

They were hacked to death in their home at 3587 St. Aubin Ave., but a few blocks from the scene of Smith's murder. Evangelista's head was severed from his body and the necks of the other victims had been hacked severely, apparently with an ax.

Although more than 500 persons were questioned by authorities in an attempt to solve the massacre, police were unable to make any headway in their investigation. The only clew was a palm print left on a doorknob in the home. Police will compare this print with one taken from Harris's hand.

"The ninth hour of the twentieth day had come Sunday," Harris told police. "It was predestined 1,500 years ago that at that hour I must make a human sacrifice to my gods. It must not be a member of the Order of Islam, but some stranger—the first person I met after leaving my home."

Smith was that person, Harris recounted. The confessed murderer told of inviting Smith into his home at 9 a.m. and of crushing his skull with the axle, "just to quiet him." The cult then required, he said, that

the body be placed on the altar and a sacrificial knife stabbed through the heart. An eight-inch knife was found thrust to the hilt in Smith's heart.

A cheap magazine was discovered in Harris' home opened to a story of mysticism of the desert. A clause "the believer must be stabbed through the heart" was underlined.

Harris was peaceable and answered questions readily until police attempted to lock him up. Then he lunged at Assistant Prosecutor John T. Meier, and struggled with officers who restrained him. Four policemen were required to subdue him.

—

### **Voodoo, Oldest African Faith, Debased by Practices in U.S.**

Voodoo, originally the only religion of the African blacks, was introduced into the United States with the first slaves. Since then it has undergone a steady debasement, until at present it is most often practiced by Negroes sharpers, making their living playing the superstitions of gullible members of their race against their pocketbooks.

In recent years the word voodoo has come to connote almost any form of exotic worship that involves incantations and attempts at sorcery. Several murders in the last decade have been attributed to voodoo influences, notably the "Hex" killings in York, Pa.

In its African state voodoo is said to involve not so much of the barbarity that has characterized the practice of its namesake in the

United States. There the religion is fundamentally the same as any other—a means by which the worshippers may attract the attention of their god and be freed of their sins. Humans are sometimes sacrificed but less frequently than animals.

Dancing, singing, and the use of blood form the fundamentals of the religion. The deity is attracted by a chant. Some living thing is killed and its warm blood used to purge the worshippers of their sins. Thanksgiving is expressed in a dance.

In the United States the voodooists have dealt principally in love philtres and curses. Negroes of the old South, bearing grudges against some one of their fellows would consult a priest, all of whom were skillful poisoners. Dissatisfied lovers would purchase potions designed to make their beloveds more receptive.

Detroit News  
Sunday, August 18th, 1935

## **EVANGELISTA CLUE GIVEN BY WOMAN**

—

### **May Solve 6-Year-Old Massacre**

—

### **Jungle Weapon Missing, She Says**

—

By Harry C. Sahs

Is it possible, the police, in their investigation of the murder of Benny Evangelista and his family six years ago, have been working all this time on the wrong theory?

Is it possible the actual slayer was not a religious maniac driven mad by the bizarre teachings of Evangelista in the image-lined basement of the Evangelista home on St. Aubin avenue, but a man who quarreled with him over a property deal?

Is it possible the police have had the actual slayer under arrest several times and have let him go, cleared of suspicion by detectives who placed too much reliance on an alibi which was apparently never thoroughly investigated?

## **A POSSIBLE SOLUTION**

Is it possible the police have been wrong all these years about the weapon with which Evangelista, his wife, and their four children were killed and would the investigation have taken a different—and probably more successful—turn had the actual nature of the weapon been understood at the time of the murders?

Information recently turned up by two detectives from the Hunt Station points to these possibilities and indicates a possible solution of the Evangelista mystery, a mass murder that remains the most terrible single crime in the history of Detroit.

The man whom the detectives view with suspicion is Umbarto Tecchio, who died last Thanksgiving, and whose bloody trail comes close to nine deaths, all by violence, Tecchio himself died of natural causes.

## **INVOLVED IN EARLIER CASE**

The butcher bodies of the Evangelista family were found in the rooms of the Evangelista home at 3587 St. Aubin avenue at noon July 3, 1929. Tecchio was the first suspect to be arrested by the police, but even before this he had come to the attention of detectives because he was involved in an earlier killing.

April 19, 1929, more than two months before the Evangelista murders, Tecchio fought with Bart Mafflo and stabbed him to death. The fight was over a debt Mafflo had said Tecchio owed him, but the police accepted Tecchio's claim of

self-defense and freed him without prosecution.

Mafflo was a brother of Tecchio's wife, Theresa, who divorced her husband three weeks after her brother's death.

Tecchio was the last person the police discovered who visited Evangelista the night of July 2, but it was found, during the investigation, that he left the Evangelista house at 8 p.m. and went to his rooming house, six blocks away.

### **HELD SHORT TIME**

Because other men in the rooming house said Tecchio came in at 11 p.m. and went to bed, and because the police could not connect him definitely with the Evangelista deaths, Tecchio was held only a short time.

However, detectives who Saturday questioned two of the men who were in the rooming house at the time, said the men did not know whether Tecchio spent the entire night in his room or whether he slipped out after the others had gone to sleep.

Tecchio's wife, after the divorce, married Louis Peruzzi, who was found shot through the heart on the porch of the Peruzzi home at 2675 Scott street, Nov. 9 1932. His death, the police decided, was self-inflicted.

Peruzzi, shortly before his death, appealed to the police for protection from Tecchio, who had threatened, he said, to kill him and blow up the house.

Last April, the widow married her third husband, Emmanuel Maicucci, with whom she now is living in the house on Scott street. This house,

once owned by Tecchio, passed to Mrs. Maicucci when she divorced Tecchio and then went out of her hands when she was unable to meet a mortgage for \$1,500. Tecchio however, asserted for years he was defrauded of the property.

### **DEALER FOUND BODY**

Tecchio himself died of a cerebral hemorrhage in a room at 2825 Orleans street, where he was living with Mary Haschel, and last Jan. 17 Mrs. Haschel crawled under the Grand Trunk Railroad gates at Mack avenue and was run over by a passenger train.

When Vincent Elias, a real estate dealer living at 2324 Glendale avenue, walked into Evangelista's home at 11 a.m. July 3 to complete a deal for a farm Evangelista was buying near Marina City, he was met by the shocking sight of Evangelista's headless body seated at a desk. The head was on the floor beside the body chopped from the trunk with a sharp, heavy weapon.

Police from the Hunt Station and detectives from the old Italian Squad, now disbanded, and the homicide squad were rushed to the house. In the bedrooms upstairs they found the bodies of Evangelista's wife, Satina, and their four children, Angeline, 3 years old, Margaret, 6, Jean, 4, and Marrow, 18 months.

They had not been decapitated but killed by sharp, heavy blows on the head, apparently as they slept.

Only Angeline, who was in a room with her sisters, Margaret and Jean, had tried to escape the killer. She,

apparently wakened by the noise of the blows, had gotten out of bed and been killed near the door. The others were all in bed. Little Marrow was clasped in his mother's arms.

Evangelista, the police discovered, lived for many years near York, Pa., the heart of the region noted for strange crimes of religious cults. It was a form of cult worship that Evangelista brought to Detroit, a worship of which he was high priest and chief healer, celebrating weird rites at the altar, in the basement of his home.

### **GROTESQUE IDOLS**

The altar room, draped in black, was filled with grotesque idols, grinning shapes taking horrible forms in the dusk of the room, painted revolting colors and covered with hair clipped from dogs.

Evangelista's Bible, "The Oldest History of the World, Discovered by Occult Science in Detroit, Mich.," was found in the room. The bible, largely incomprehensible, had a vein of horror running through it.

Because of these discoveries, the police concentrated their search for a member of his congregation whom the celebration of the rites had driven insane.

The killings, detectives decided, were the work of a mad axman. The hunt led to York and the remote fastnesses of the Pennsylvania mountains, where the descendents of the old pioneers practice rites that frequently lead to savage murder, but the results were negative—as futile as the search in Detroit.

It was from Mrs. Maicucci that Detectives Charles Snyder and George Browne, of the Hunt Station, recently learned an important fact that never had before come to light, Mrs. Maicucci knew the interior of the Evangelista house, for Tecchio, her first husband, took her there several times for treatment by Evangelista.

Over Evangelista's desk, she said, fastened to the wall, were two Spanish machetes, heavy murderous weapons more than two feet long, used by the natives of Central American countries for cutting through the heavy jungle growth. These were missing when Evangelista's body was discovered and never have been found.

The wounds on the bodies, the detectives declare, were not the kind that could have been inflicted by an ax. They were too long and too deep.

But the sharp machetes could have made the wounds, they say.

### **SAYS HE SAW TECCHIO**

Furthermore, Browne and Snyder believe they have placed Tecchio at Evangelista's home at 5 a.m. July 3, despite the alibi which he gave when he first was arrested. A newsboy Frank Costanza, now 20 years old, was passing the house that mourning and saw Tecchio on the porch.

Costanza, who now lives at 3572 Grandy avenue, told Snyder and Browne he spoke to Tecchio, who had bought papers from him, but Tecchio responded only with a grunt. Later in the day Costanza learned of the murders and was so frightened he walked blocks out of his way for

weeks to avoid the house.

He told a friend of his experience, and word got to the police, but a detective assigned to find Costanza reported Costanza had died, so the hunt for the newsboy halted. More recently, however, Detective Lieut. Edward Graff, chief of Hunt Station detectives, learned the boy was living and sent Browne and Snyder after him.

Placing Tecchio at the home at that hour of the mourning, only a short time after the murders are believed to have been committed, is regarded as highly important, for none of the men who supported Tecchio's alibi could say with absolute certainty that Tecchio was in his bedroom all night.

### **LIVED IN ROOMING HOUSE**

He was living in a rooming house at 2830 Pierce street, operated by Dominic Giureate, now of 2120 Mack avenue. His roommate was Angelo De Poli, deported to Italy by the police shortly after the Evangelista case, and in an adjoining room, with a curtained doorway communicating, lived Camillo Treas, now of 3635 Pulford avenue, and Treas' cousin, now living in Pennsylvania.

Treas said he went with Tecchio to Evangelista's home July 2, sitting on the porch of the house while Tecchio talked with Evangelista in a loud voice. They left at about 8 p.m., he told detectives, and went back to the rooming house. Tecchio then disappeared for an hour and when he came back asked Treas to go to several blind pigs with him.

They got home again at 11 p.m.

and both went to bed. De Poli was asleep, and Treas said he also went to sleep.

Giureato slept in a room near the front door but the back door of the house was only a short distance from Tecchio's room and all of the men had keys for front and back doors. Tecchio was gone when Treas got up at 7 a.m. July 3, and Giureato said he believes Tecchio was gone when he got up at 4 p.m.

Whether there was a quarrel between the two men Treas could not tell. Tecchio, he said, always spoke in a high, excited voice and even in normal conversation seemed to be angry and quarrelsome.

He said he could hear Tecchio talking to Evangelista, but Evangelista answered in such a low voice his replies were not audible.

Just before Tecchio was arrested, five hours after the bodies were discovered, Tecchio entered his rooming house by the back door, carrying his mason's bag, which was about three feet long and made of canvas.

### **DID NOT SEE BAG**

Detective-Lieut. Tom Wysocki, of the then Italian Squad, and ten detectives were waiting for Tecchio, and arrested him, taking to the Police Headquarters. Wysocki, questioned today about the arrest, said he did not see Tecchio's bag, and other detectives who worked on the case from time to time, said they know nothing about any such bag.

Wysocki said he does not know whether Tecchio's room and

possessions were searched at any time.

Treas, questioned Saturday by Snyder and Browne, said he never was taken to the headquarters for questioning by detectives about the alibi.

De Poli was arrested with Tecchio and was held because he refused to talk about Tecchio at all. It was in retaliation for his unhelpful conduct that the police investigated him and found he had entered the United States illegally. He was deported so soon after the murders that he was not given a chance to return to his rooming house.

Tecchio, according to the information given Snyder by Treas, had a real estate deal of some kind with Evangelista and his visit to Evangelista the night of July 2 was to pay Evangelista money for property he was buying. This property was the house on Scott street, which was found to be in Evangelista's name after Evangelista's death, although Tecchio asserted he had made the final payment.

It is possible, Snyder and Browne believe, that the bag contained the secret of the Evangelista murders, for it was a perfect place of concealment for the machetes, if Tecchio actually was the killer and took them with him from the Evangelista house.

No one would have questioned his right to carry such a bag, the detectives pointed out.

In the first mad search through the Evangelista house, detectives and patrolmen undoubtedly wrecked many clues that might have helped in their case. A set of fingerprints was

found on a door knob, but whether these prints actually were made by the killer or by one of the many policemen is not known. The prints were not those of any of the men the police have arrested in their six-year search. That is certain.

The neighborhood has changed since the discovery of the six bodies. An undertaking establishment is now in the house where Benny once practiced his occult rites, and the police have never found anyone who could be proved the killer.

Perhaps Tecchio is the answer to the mystery. He is the nearest solution to the case the police have found. Graff is convinced of his guilt and Snyder and Browne believe he was the man.

But Tecchio took the answer, if he knew it, to the grave with him.



UMBARTO TECCHIO

Detroit News  
Monday, August 19th, 1935

## **Evangelist Data Ordered**

—

### **Pickert Asks Full Report on Massacre Case**

—

A complete report on the Benny Evangelista murder case, the work that was done by detectives at the time of mass killing six years ago, and the more recent developments was ordered today by Police Commissioner Pickert.

His order to Fred. W. Frahm, chief of detectives, came as the result of revelations of recently uncovered facts in the case which passed unnoticed in the investigation that followed the murders.

Frahm and John I. Navarre, head of the homicide squad, assigned Detective George Rose to the case. Their report will go to Pickert, who will determine what action will be taken.

### **PICKERT'S STATEMENT**

"I don't know much about this case. I wasn't in the department six years ago and my interest didn't lead me to make a thorough investigation," Pickert said, "But it

looks as if there is something here that should be brought out and we'll see that everything in the case comes to light."

The investigation of the slaying of Benny Evangelista, his wife and their four children in the Evangelista home at 3587 St. Aubin avenue, on July 3, 1929, one of the knottiest problems which has ever confronted the Detroit police, was reopened officially Saturday night when the findings of Detective Charles Snyder, George Browne, John Schmidt and Daniel Driscoli were announced.

The work of the detectives points to the possibility that Umbarto Tecchio, the first man arrested after the slaying but freed because of an alibi, may have been more seriously implicated in the murders than was suspected six years ago. Tecchio died last year, following a prolonged drinking bout.

Information picked up recently by the detectives indicates his alibi was not as air-tight as was thought.

Navarre was in charge of the homicide squad when Evangelista was killed, and men from his department questioned Tecchio, as well as the chief witnesses in the case.

### **ONE DEPORTED.**

Tecchio was never considered seriously as a suspect because he maintained he was sleeping the night of the killings in a rooming house, with four other men in adjoining rooms. But the most recent police investigation shows that two of those men were never questioned in detail

about the night.

Of the five men who were in Tecchio's rooming house that night, one was deported to Italy by detectives who were angered by his defiant attitude, and another is working in Pennsylvania. Camillio Treas, one of the roomers, and Dominic Gutreato, proprietor of the rooming house, who are still in Detroit, were to be questioned in detail today.

The work of Hunt Station detectives has overturned the police theory that the Evangelista family was killed by an axman. The weapon, Detectives Browne and Snyder discovered, probably was a machete. Evangelista had two such weapons over the desk in his office and these were missing when the bodies were found.

Detectives who worked on the case earlier will be questioned about a mason's tool bag that Tecchio owned. Treas, when questioned Saturday by Browne and Snyder, said Tecchio had the bag just before he was arrested, five hours after the bodies were found.

### **POSSIBLE HIDING PLACE**

Tecchio brought the bag into the rooming house with him, entering by the back door. He was arrested by detectives headed by Lieut. Tom Wysocki. The bag was not taken to Police Headquarters, nor did Wysocki, Saturday, remember ever seeing it.

This bag might have been, detectives point out, an excellent hiding place for the machetes, or for

blood-stained clothing.

Tecchio's business relationship with Evangelista will also be studied. Evangelista, a healer and mystic, who brought a weird cult worship from the mounts of Southern Pennsylvania to Detroit, also dabbled in real estate and had sold Tecchio a house early in 1929. There is a possibility, police now admit, that this might have been the motive for the killing.

*special bonus material*

*a journey to a graveyard*

[The bodies of the Evangelista family were buried in Detroit's Mt. Olivet Cemetery. In December of 2001, I located the Evangelista plot and discovered that the collective grave has no marker. The family's final resting place is distinguishable only by the size of its emptiness, a blank island in a sea of granite.]







